

Cogito

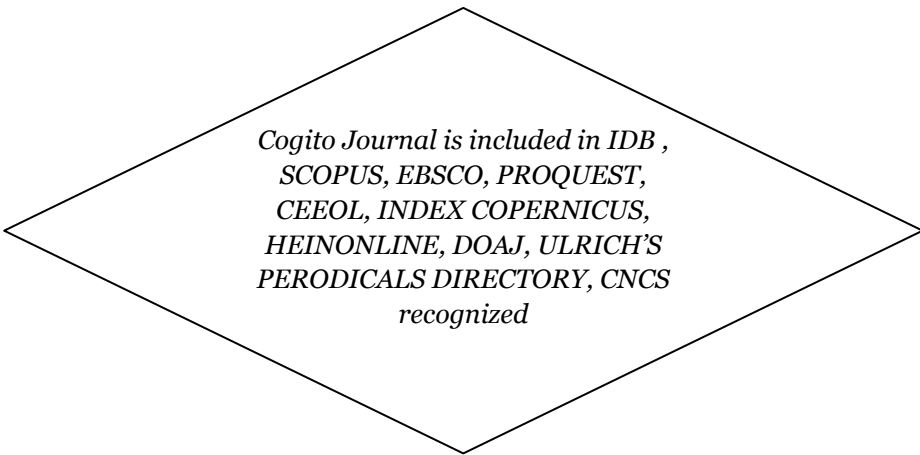
MULTIDISCIPLINARY RESEARCH JOURNAL

Vol. XII, no. 1/March, 2020

Bucharest, 2020
ISSN 2068-6706

**Cogito Journal is published under the aegis of
“Dimitrie Cantemir” Christian University**

Address: 176 Splaiul Unirii, Bucharest
Phone: 021.330.79.00, 021.330.79.11,
021.330.79.14
Fax: 021.330.87.74
E-mail: cogito.ucdc@yahoo.com



*Cogito Journal is included in IDB ,
SCOPUS, EBSCO, PROQUEST,
CEEOL, INDEX COPERNICUS,
HEINONLINE, DOAJ, ULRICH'S
PERIODICALS DIRECTORY, CNCS
recognized*

Cogito

MULTIDISCIPLINARY RESEARCH JOURNAL

Vol. XII, no. 1/March, 2020



Every author is responsible for the originality of the article and that the text was not published previously.

CONTENTS

PHILOSOPHY AND HISTORY

RELIGIOUS APPROACH TO NON-ANTHROPOCENTRIC ETHICS IN ENVIRONMENTAL PHILOSOPHY	7
Peter O. O. Ottuh	

HUMAN SUFFERING, AS A RESULT OF THE MISUSE OF FREE WILL	25
Alexandru Gabriel Negoită	

LIVE AND LET LIVE: MAKING SENSE OF SAMUEL BASSEY'S 'ANTHROPOHOLISM' AS ETHICS FOR ENVIRONMENTAL MANAGEMENT	34
Gabriel Asuquo	

THE INFORMATIVE CENTER OF THE 10TH GENDARME REGIMENT FROM SUCEAVA, IN 1940.....	43
Valentin Ioan	

SOCIOLOGY AND POLITICAL SCIENCES

TOWARDS A NEW SENSE OF US IN THE THIRD MILLENNIUM, BETWEEN SOLIDARITY AND SOCIAL SUSTAINABILITY.....	51
Mihaela Gavrilă, Lidia Velici	

THE DIFFERENTIAL IMPACT OF CONTEMPORARY GLOBALISATION POLICIES ON WOMEN IN RURAL COMMUNITIES OF DELTA, KANO AND KWARA STATES, NIGERIA	59
Harriet Efanodor-Obeten Omokiniovo	

THE ROLE OF WOMEN IN SHAPING FOREIGN POLICY AT THE LEVEL OF THE EUROPEAN UNION AND THE STATES OF THE MIDDLE EAST (AN APPROACH FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF THE FEMINIST THEORY OF INTERNATIONAL RELATIONS)	82
Dana Gabriela Pleșa	

JURIDICAL AND ECONOMIC SCIENCES

THE SPECIFIC OF "CONTRAVENTION FINES" IN THE LEGAL REGULATION OF THE LEGISLATION OF THE REPUBLIC OF MOLDOVA AND ROMANIA - ELEMENTS OF COMPARATIVE LAW	102
--	------------

Oleg Pantea

THE WORLD PRACTICE OF GOVERNMENTS SUPPORT THE SMALL BUSINESS: LESSONS FOR UKRAINE	110
--	------------

Olha Pavlykivska,
Lesia Marushchak,
Kilyar Oleksandra

ASSESSING POST 1991 ETHIOPIA'S INDUSTRIALIZATION AND INDUSTRIAL POLICY	132
---	------------

Fesseha Mulu Gebremariam,
Bizuayehu Daba Feyisa

THE INFLUENCE OF ATYPICAL SITUATIONS AT MACROECONOMIC LEVEL IN REPUBLIC OF MOLDOVA: CASE STUDY	160
---	------------

Lilia Sargu

FOREIGN LANGUAGES AND LITERATURES

PARADOXES OF RAP ARTISTS' ROLE IDENTITY: SAGE, MAGICIAN OR TRICKSTER?	179
--	------------

Nataliia Kravchenko,
Valentyna Snitsar,
Viktoriia Blidchenko-Naiko

RELIGIOUS APPROACH TO NON-ANTHROPOCENTRIC ETHICS IN ENVIRONMENTAL PHILOSOPHY

Peter O. O. Ottuh*

pottuh@delsu.edu.ng

Abstract: *The environmental crisis brought about by the application of modern science is severe, but few have sought the intellectual and historical causes of these mayhem. The role, application and function of modern science and technology has led to the destruction of the sacred and spiritual value of nature. The loss of intimacy between man and nature is in fact due to the disappearance of metaphysical doctrine and its replacement by rational theology. Due to this fall, man has lost the paradise of a symbolic world of meaning and discovered a new earth, full of facts which he is able to observe, remould and manipulate in accordance to his will. Today, many scholars and ethicist are calling for a non – anthropocentric solution to environment environmental ethics. This research attempts to have a look at some religious Approach to Non-anthropocentric ethics in Environmental Philosophy. Within the reviewed religion, this work discovered that the present ecological crisis calls for promotion of eco-spirituality, a spirituality that desires a creation-centred perspective instead of ego-centric life-style. The acceptance of a 'reverend receptive' attitude towards the natural world instead of a consumeristic and exploitive attitude can gradually solve the present ecological crisis.*

Keywords: *Non-anthropocentrism, Religious Approach, Environment, Environmental Ethics.*

Introduction

The creation of artificial environment in the world's urbanized areas resulting from the domination of nature by modern man has in fact threatened his very existence. Even the religious man living in such environment has lost the sense of the- spiritual significance of nature. Today, technology through industrialization is capable of solving human trivial needs, however, larger percentage of the world's population still lives in extreme poverty. Such a grave situation was expressed by Mahatma

* Lecturer, Department of Religious Studies and Philosophy, Delta State University, Abraka, Delta State, Nigeria.

Gandhi by saying that there is enough in the world to meet everyone's need, but not everyone's greed¹.

It may be said that scientific development is the main cause of environmental crisis or the crisis between man and nature. "This is due to the fact" Taylor says, "that scientific knowledge of nature is secularized. This secularized knowledge of nature divorced from the vision of God in nature has become accepted as the sole legitimate form of science"². The disharmony between man and nature is due to the destruction of harmony between man and God. For a religious person, the Universe has some sacred aspect. The very structure of the Cosmos contains a spiritual message for man and is thereby a revelation coming from the same source as religion itself. Cosmos is a divine creation, coming from the hands of God where we find the world impregnated with sacredness. Due to vulgarisation of modern science, cosmos, which was pure and transparent has become opaque, i.e. it has lost its spiritual meaning. In the process of vulgarization of science, nature has lost its sacredness and divinity and has therefore become secular.

Cosmology in its actual sense is a sacred science of the world connected to revelation and metaphysical doctrine, which has disappeared specially in the west due to general neglect of metaphysics. The negligence of metaphysics is the outcome of modern science, which is based on the principle of reduction of multiple levels of reality to a single psychological domain. Since cosmology encompasses both physics and metaphysics and modern science ignores metaphysics and is directed towards instrumental values, it therefore neglects cosmology in part. As modern science is based on reductionist principles, it takes no notice of or sets aside degrees of knowledge, the genesis of metaphysics leading to destruction of bondage or harmony between man and nature. Modern science, although in itself natural, has injected the knowledge of facts into modern man's mentality, but it has failed to inculcate enough knowledge of the underlying nature of existence and this limitation of modern science threatens the very existence of man with all other animate and inanimate species of the natural world.

From the above discussion, it is evident that in our current era, no common ground exists in the field of relation between science, philosophy and religion. The metaphysical doctrine, which can be taken as a common denominator of science and religion is forgotten, as a result of which the 'hierarchy of knowledge has crumbled into a confused mass in which the

¹ Lai, Pan Chiu, "Interreligious Dialogue and Environmental Ethics." *Studies in Interreligious Dialogue*, vol. 21, no. 1, 2011, p. 19.

² F.S. Taylor, *The Fourfold Vision*, London, 1945, p. 91.

segments are no longer organically united'³. The misconceptions and misunderstandings between modern science of nature and the knowledge of natural order which has a theological, spiritual and religious base has led to endless controversies. For this very reason it can be said that today there exists no philosophy of nature which provides a more logical explanation of scientific occurrences despite the philosophies provided by several modern thinkers like Whitehead and Maritain. One can even say that there exists no theology of nature which provides a spiritual bridge between man and nature or explain the inner meaning of natural phenomena and make them spiritually transparent or understanding.

Modern man fails to develop an intimate relationship with nature or be deeply concerned about it due to the loss of symbolist spirit which looks into symbols rather than facts. Modern man lies in the world of phenomena, where each phenomena is expressed in terms of mathematical formulae or nature's material usefulness is explained to man who is considered as a two-legged animal whose destiny does not go beyond his earthly existence. If one has to provide a solution to the present day environmental crisis then search for an alternative world view becomes imperative. This alternative world view based on the holistic approach of the world. The essence of this work is to look into some Religious Approach to Non-anthropocentric ethics in Environmental Philosophy.

Religion and Environment

It has been assumed that "values...motivate us to act", and depending on our values different actions will be taken. If religion is found to play a role in forming an environmental worldview, one potential implication could be to use religious social structures to promote valuing the environment. An important goal would be to promote the eco-centric worldview, which holds the belief that nature does not exist for humans, but that humans are a part of the system and promotes using natural resources sustainably⁴. Using religious social structures may be more complicated if it is found that religions are instead instilling values that support the anthropocentric worldview. The anthropocentric worldview supports the idea that humans are the dominant species and that humans can exploit all of the earth's systems through the use of science and

³ Nasr, Seyyed Hossein, *Man and Nature; The Spiritual Crisis of Modern Man*, Vikash Publishing House Pvt. Ltd, New Delhi, Bombay, Bangalore, Calcutta, Kanpur, 1968, p. 14.

⁴ Bassey, Samuel Akpan. "Anthropoholism'As an Authentic Tool for Environmental Management." *International Journal of Environmental Pollution and Environmental Modelling* (2019): 160-168.

technology unhindered⁵. However, if it is found that religion does not play a role in forming either environmental worldview, religious social structures are not automatically barred from being a possible avenue to promote the ecocentric worldview. It could simply mean religious figureheads or doctrines have not addressed this topic.

Investigating the role that religion plays with respect to environmental values may provide insight on a possible route to influence societal behavior, with the hope of enacting change. However, some have criticized religion for promoting values that form anthropocentric worldviews, which are thought to lead to poor environmental practices.

“Especially in its Western form, Christianity is the most anthropogenic religion the world has seen. When God shaped Adam he was foreshadowing the image of the incarnate Christ, the Second Adam. Man shares, in great measure, God’s transcendence of nature. Christianity...not only established a dualism of man and nature but also insisted that it is God’s will that man exploit nature for his proper ends”⁶.

White states that most of the world’s mythologies provided stories of creation, but the early teachings of Christian creation inherited a much different story. This stems from Genesis 1:26, “Then God said, Let us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth”⁷. White had largely supported his arguments using passages from The Bible.

However, unlike White, Oelshlaeger goes on to say that the inherent prejudice against religion should be reevaluated. Viewing religion as the enemy provides an unnecessary roadblock in the collective efforts to develop more useful habits of action. Change will only happen when we come together as a people rather than claiming a “bad guy” who destroys nature and a “good guy” who protects nature. We are only destroying our chances of solidarity, which is needed to change behavior. He believes that “religion is the most likely way that Americans can move themselves to care for creation”⁸. However, this is not a claim that religion is a solve all solution, but rather that it has an integral part and function in the larger process.

⁵ Bassey, Samuel Akpan, and Thomas Micah Pimaro Jr. "Enyimba's Notion of Madukaku and The Question of Anthropocentrism In African Environmental Ethics." *Int. J. of Environmental Pollution & Environmental Modelling* 2.3 (2019), p. 129.

⁶ White, Lynn. "The Historical Roots of Our Ecologic Crisis." *Science*, vol. 155, no. 3767, 1967, p. 1203.

⁷ Penprase, Bryan E., and Bryan E. Penprase, "Creation Stories from Around the World." *The Power of Stars*, 2011, pp. 77–98.

⁸ Oelshlaeger, Max, *Caring for creation: An ecumenical approach to the environmental crisis*. Yale University Press, 1996, p. 66.

Since White's original 1967 paper, blaming religion for the world's environmental issues, a major religious figurehead attempted to address this topic. In 1989, Pope John Paul II addressed the issue of environmental degradation by announcing it as a moral issue. However, Pope John Paul II states that soon after this relationship was established, Adam and Eve "destroyed the existing harmony by deliberately going against the Creator's plan, that is, by choosing to sin", which disrupted the relationship between humans and the earth⁹. Pope John Paul continued, saying "when man turns his back on the Creator's plan, he provokes a disorder which has inevitable repercussions on the rest of the created order. If man is not at peace with God, than earth itself cannot be at peace"¹⁰. This disconnect between humans and the environment, according to Pope John Paul II, has become a moral issue on the grounds that the issue stems from a "lack of respect for life"¹¹.

The conflicting views offered by White from citing The Bible then by the Pope can offer some complexities when trying to understand the role of religion in the formation of worldviews. It appears then that biblical literalism, or how exact one takes The Bible's message to be, may influence the values they receive from the religion. This was addressed and studied in this paper. Luckily, it can be seen that change is already starting to happen. Faith communities are beginning to mobilize, specifically in America, to take action to mitigate climate change and to engage in the environmental movement. In 2004, Gretchen Hughes Lieberman, investigated faith-based environmentalism in four congregations¹² (Lieberman, 2004). She found that there is growing evidence of an environmental movement within the religious sector, however only in some congregations. It appears there are major differences with denominational social teachings on how their religion affects action toward treatment and care of the environment. Lieberman concludes that Christianity is not inherently anti-environmental; in fact many of the faith believe that God has in fact called us to protect the environment and respect it as God's creation¹³. There have been many conflicting views on religion and environmental worldviews. Some researchers throw stones at religion, blaming it for instilling an anthropocentric worldview. Others say we should put our stones together and create a foundation for change. Yet,

⁹ John Paul II, *Peace with God the Creator, Peace with All of Creation*. Libreria Editrice Vaticana, 1989, p. 45.

¹⁰ Ibid

¹¹ Ibid

¹² Lieberman, Gretchen Hughes, *Caring for creation: Investigating faith-based environmentalism in four congregations*. Diss. University of Oregon, 2004, p. 76.

¹³ Ibid

others are still unsure what to think. The factors leading to environmental degradation may be summed up under the four headings

- (a) Human's desire to dominate and control nature
- (b) Materialistic approach of human society.
- (c) Blind faith in science and technology lacking metaphysical base.
- (d) An unconstrained growth ethic in a limited world

Humans have become conscious about their misdeeds and feel that it is indeed difficult to survive within a diseased environment. In this situation the question which arises is how can we work up to protect, preserve and sustain our environment and create a cordial relationship with nature, while at the same time enjoy the benefits of science and technology? To develop a harmonious relationship with nature one ought to delve into the religious and cultural imperatives. In this respect Dwivedi remarks,

“World religions can provide a framework for changing out attitudes. Our religion teach us that the land, rivers, mountains, minerals, oceans and other species should be held in trust for God, but can be used for the general welfare of humanity. Our religions tell us that we should consider ourselves only as trustees of the universe, of course as trustees, we are authorized by God to use natural resources, but we have no divine power of control over nature and elements. Moreover, from the perspective of many religions, the abuse and exploitation of nature for immediate gain is unjust, immoral and unethical. In the following paragraphs we shall try to analyze the contribution of some dominant religions of the world towards environmental protection and sustainable development”¹⁴ (36).

In the following paragraphs we shall try to analyze the contribution of some dominant religions of the world towards environmental protection and sustainable development.

Hinduism

In Hinduism we find the sanctity of all forms, animate as well as inanimate being maintained. This religion holds that God, the creator of this world is all powerful and has supreme authority over all his creations including man. It therefore follows that man; the possessor of supreme intelligence has no right to confer degrees of relative worth to the different species created by God. This further indicates that no human being can inflict any harm or damage to God's creations which makes us come to the conclusion that all living species, animate as well as inanimate, humans as

¹⁴ O.P., Dwivedi, *Environmental Ethics, Our Dharma to the Environment*, Sanchar Publishing House, New Delhi, p. 7.

well as non-humans have the equal right of existence in the world¹⁵. We may thus say that Hindu religion is centered round the ethics of biocentrism.

Moreover, domination over the non-human species and all other forms of exploitation of nature was totally forbidden in Hindu religion and people were expected to co-exist in peace and harmony with nature. In various Hindu scriptures it is found that everything relating to the Cosmos, everything relating to the nature, i.e. its creation, maintenance and destruction is up to the will of God. Hence one may say that Hindus equate Nature (*Prakrtz*) with God. Human beings by no means can subjugate nature. On the contrary, they have more obligation and duties towards nature. The incarnation of God in the form of various animals, trees and plants made people show their respect towards the natural world which ultimately lead to the preservation and conservation of nature. The basis of Hindu culture and religion is *Ahimsa* or non-violence and it gives rise to a system of guidelines for maintenance and conservation of nature. The land ethic of Leopold which pleads for the preservation of natural species is found in the ecological insights of Hinduism.

Man-Nature Relationship in the Vedic Period

The first glimpses of reverence for nature or environment can be found in the excavations and findings of Indus valley civilization where Hindu religion had its predominance. The zoomorphic nature of the Hindu deities expressed reverence for animal life during the Vedic period. The glorification of nature by the Vedic Hindus was expressed through their reverence for *Usa* (the Goddess of Dawn) and *Aranyaini* (tutelary goddess of the forest and wilderness). A number of sacred hymns were chanted by the people in respect for *Usa* and *Aranyaini*. Subbarao says, "The natural world was not understood as something apart from man, but as a reflection of his moods and passions"¹⁶. Vedic man utilized nature for his benefit and his life was totally dependent on nature. But his interrelation with nature revealed his respectful attitude towards the same. The Vedic man thought himself to be a part of nature¹⁷. The history of creation according to Vedic literature states that the source of creation is *yajniya-purusa*, i.e. a person born from the sacrifice. With all natural creations human beings were also created from which it may be concluded that

¹⁵ Framarin, Christopher, "Hinduism and Environmental Ethics." *Hinduism and Environmental Ethics*, 2014, p. 87.

¹⁶ Framarin, Christopher G., "Hinduism and Environmental Ethics: An Analysis and Defense of a Basic Assumption." *Asian Philosophy*, vol. 22, no. 1, 2012, p. 79.

¹⁷ Subbarao, S., *Ethics of Ecology and Environment*, Raj at Publication, New Delhi, 1985, p. 251.

human beings are very much a part of nature and has no supreme status with respect to other members or species of the universe or cosmos. The Vedic man depended on nature for the satisfaction of his basic needs, but not for the fulfillment of his greed. He was indebted to Nature for fulfilling his basic needs and his indebtedness towards nature is revealed variously.

Deification of all natural elements or factors of the environment like *Prthivi* (mother earth) *agni* (fire), *usa.* (dawn), *surya* (sun) etc reveals his respect for nature. The sun was considered to be the soul of the universe and was therefore revered and worshipped. All these natural elements were worshipped because of their supernatural capacities and the role played by them in maintaining the Cosmic order.

The notion of cosmic law or cosmic order is of outmost significance in Vedic religion. People believed that the universe was an ordered whole created and run by the Supreme power, i.e. God and nature had its own system of manifestation. The notion of physical order is combined with a belief in ethical order and both are brought together in the concept of *Rta*. All the components of nature move in a well- defined periphery and there is a definite order in the occurrence of the natural phenomena. Although natural phenomena or occurrences change, there remains something unchangeable behind the changing occurrence. *Rta* is in fact the unchangeable behind the changing occurrence. In *Dharmasastra* it says, “The concept of *Rta* was a governing or regulating principles, which stood for all regular phenomena. It shows that the Vedic thinkers believed in certain principle governing the universe, the functional energy that was manifested through certain elements which constituted the universe. It also meant the Truth order behind the phenomena”¹⁸.

The genesis of Hindu ethics of environment is also witnessed in the *Upanishads*, the highest ideal of Hinduism where a harmony between Brahman and atman can be realized¹⁹. According to the *Upanishads* the ultimate reality is unchangeable reality around which the exterior world is constantly changing. The essence of man is identical with the ultimate reality which can be manifested by merging Brahman with atman. According to the *Upanishads*, Brahman, the ultimate source of the external world and the atman, i.e. the inner self of the person are none the less different. The self or *atman* is indeed Brahman, something manifested through self-realization. As Brahman is equated with *atman* the macrocosm of Brahman is the macrocosm of *atman*.

¹⁸ Goel, Aruna, *Environment and Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, Deep & Deep Publications, 2018. p. 50.

¹⁹ Wayman, Alex, and K. Narayansvami Aiyar, “Thirty Minor Upanishads, Including the Yoga Upanishads.” *Philosophy East and West*, vol. 32, no. 3, 1982, p. 360.

The doctrine of *karma* finds an important place in the *Upanishads*. The doctrine, very similar to the cause and effect theory, states that each and every action of man, good or evil, has its consequences. The doctrine of *karma* has an intimate relationship with the theory of rebirth. This simply means that the good or evil deed of man IS reflected in his rebirth. An individual has to face the ill consequences of his misdeeds in the future. He may take rebirth in any crippled living form. On the contrary, an individual may be rewarded for his good deeds. The Vedic people had a strong belief in the doctrine of *Karma* and the theory of rebirth. In fear of punishment they revered nature due to which the environmental balance was well maintained. As far as the non-anthropocentric approach of ethics is concerned, it can be supported from the Indian standpoint. In *Advaita Vedanta*, body is taken as the substratum of enjoyment (*bhoga-ayatanam*) of the result of *Karma*. The body is of four types, arising from mother womb (*jarayuja-ianra*), arising from eggs (*andaja-iarira*), from moisture (*sredaja Sarira*) and coming through piercing the earth to birds etc., third to mosquito etc., and fourth to trees, plants and the like. From this it follows that all types of body are the substrata of the enjoyment of actions. Animals, birds, reptiles, trees, plants and all forms of living species have got their bodies, because they have to enjoy the result of action done in this birth or previous birth. They have the sense of enjoyment as well as freedom. For the sake of their own freedom, they have possessed bodies and have got existence in this earth, but not for the benefit of human beings.

Sanctity of all forms of life is the essence of Hindu religion. God, the sole creator of the Universe has absolute sovereignty even all living species, humans as well as non-humans. God's creation is absolutely pure and divine, therefore no creature, not even the humans possess any right to inflict harm on any other species without reason. All species are therefore equal and have equal right of existence. This concept of ecological harmony is very distinctively mentioned in the *Jsavasya Upanishad*:

The universe is the creation of supreme power meant for the benefit of all; Individual species must therefore learn to enjoy its benefits by forming a part of the system in close relationship with other species; Let not any one species encroach upon the other's right."²⁰.

The principle of unity forms the essence of *Upanishads*. The Supreme Being is the universal creator and it is the soul which binds all together. As all the spokes are held together in the hub and felly of a wheel, just so in

²⁰ Jamieson, Dale, "A Companion to Environmental Philosophy." *A Companion to Environmental Philosophy*, John Wiley & Sons, 2007, p. 44.

this soul of all things, all gods, all worlds, all breathing things, all selves are held together.

The whole world is seen to be the stage where each living creature comes and plays its part or role and then exits. One Spirit plays many parts. There is one Spirit, one God, one Creature who manifests himself in so many forms. The living creatures have their entrances and exits, i.e. as long as the Soul or Spirit is within them, they play their role on the world and their death means depart of the soul from their body, i.e. matter. We may thus say that, "Matter is in tension with the Spirit, but Spirit, step by evolutionary step, comes into its own"²¹.

The cosmic view of Hinduism visualizes all humans as an intrinsic part of nature. Among all creatures of the Supreme, humans are one and do not occupy any special position by virtue of their special qualities. The unitive view of Hinduism is in close tie with Deep ecology where human beings are also seen as a part of Nature. This view is quite opposing to Shallow ecology which is anthropocentric ascribing to homo-sapiens the power of dominance over nature on account of their superiority.

The unitive thinking of Hinduism is essentially holistic emphasizing the whole over the parts. According to Capra and Steindl, "The properties of the parts can be understood only from the dynamics of the whole. Ultimately, there are no parts at all. What we call a part is merely a pattern in an inseparable web of relationships"²² (Capra, and Steindl, 83). Therefore, one can say that the micro universe is in union with the macro universe. Each individual living species of the earth is in fact a part of the distant stars.

This unitive view of Hinduism fosters respect and reverence toward all living species of the universe. Each species is a part of the whole and all are equal. This concept of unity of life prohibits one to inflict injury or harm on the other which in turn fosters *Ahimsa* or non-violence which is *very* necessary for the conservation and preservation of the biotic community. The Vedantic philosophy rules out the possibility of destruction and exploitation of nature by man since it leave no scope for man to think himself to be the sole possessor of nature. The concept of unity of life is very closely linked to the principle of interconnectedness as exemplified in the *Upanishads*. *Rta* or the 'immanence dynamic order' which makes the universe function in a definite path links cause and effect and all species are subject to this natural order. From *Rta* emerges *dharma* which means the binding force and from dharma we find the emergence of the laws of

²¹ S. Subbarao, *Ethics of Ecology and Environment*, op.cit., p. 269.

²² Capra, F. and David Steindl: Rast, *Belonging to the Universe*, New York Harper, 1991, p. 83.

Karma which states according as one acts, according as one conducts himself, so does he become.

The doctrine of *Karma* clearly states that every action or every deed that an individual performs has its effects in the world which may be immediate or in the long feature²³. This theory generates a tendency or *vasana* within the individuals to act in a proper manner with respect to nature and all worldly creatures. In other words we may say that the doctrine of karma which forms an important part of the Upanishads guides individual's action which in turn helps in the maintenance of ecological balance. Environmental crisis in fact crops up due to the two main factors, such as, (a) the tendency of humans to think themselves superior than non-humans and separate from nature and (b) the propensity to ignore the aftermath of his actions.

Consciousness or awareness about the environment is very prominent in many of the *Dharma -sastras* especially in *Manu-Samhita*. Manu writes that Bhagwad Brahma, the irresistible powerful creator, first created the earth and the sky, then the family of the Universe with various stars, plants and satellites and then he himself made his appearance. Lord Brahma, the almighty creator, created water through his supreme power of creation. Into the water, he threw the spirit which appeared as a testicle with the rays of the sun. From the testicle Brahman, the father of all creation took his birth. He stayed within the testicle for the whole year till the womb became ripe and divided into two parts. Brahman created heaven in the upper portion of the testicle and world in the lower portion of the testicle. This is, in fact, the story of creation as stated by Manu.

The environment thus created with living and non-living objects stayed in close association and interdependence on each other in a state of perfect balance. Manu says that all living and non-living objects have a role in protecting the environment.

Even in the early centuries Manu and other *dharma Sastrakaras* realized the importance of trees and therefore prescribed rules for preservation of forest and fresh plantation of trees.

Consciousness about pollution of water bodies is also found in *Manu Samhita*. Manu imposed restrictions on bathing in water used for drinking and other purposes. Discharge of stool, urine, blood, mucus etc., and washing of dirty clothes in water bodies was strictly forbidden by Manu in his scriptures which would save water from being polluted.

Restrictions against merciless slaughtering of animals and consumption of meat of birds and animals is found in *Manu Samhita* which reveals promotion of an attitude of love, respect and care amongst

²³ Söhnen-Thieme, Renate, "Sutton, Nicholas, Religious Doctrines in the Mahābhārata." *Indo-Iranian Journal*, vol. 53, no. 2, 2012, p. 187.

humans even during early centuries. Hence, we see that the true value of nature was well understood by Manu in the ancient period and in order to save the environment from disaster he laid a strict code of conduct to be followed by the people, some of which are discussed in the earlier paragraphs. By following the strictures laid by Manu a man becomes pure through and through which builds in him an attitude of love, sympathy and respect towards the entire environment. Thus, a revival of Manu's code of conduct and its application by humans in the present society can save the environment from further catastrophe. Manu held that there should not be any dichotomy between man and nature, animate and inanimate. The concept of *Rta* which reveals the vision of unity within diversities has made the *Samhitas* meaningful in the present day context.

The revival of *Upanishadic* teachings, especially the principle of interconnectedness is very necessary to overcome the environmental crisis of the present century. The holistic view of the world where there is no compartmentalization of the planet from the civilization should be grasped in its full sense by the people to block environmental crisis. The holistic world view based on the principle of interconnectedness IS closely related to the principle of interdependence. Interdependence of man and nature was expressed in Hinduism in the earlier days in the form of sacrificial ritual or yajna. Through the preference of this sacrificial ritual people intended to secure the blessing of God, who maintained the generative properties of nature, who in turn depended on individuals to sustain them through obligation.

In the later period interdependence of the biotic species, especially man was expressed in the notion of *rina* or debt. The notion of *rina* or debt implied that one ought to return back what one has received. This principle of reciprocity was very helpful in maintaining the balance of nature.

In fact the very term 'ecosystem' reveals the notion of interdependence between the habitat or physical environment and the biotic or the living species of the world. All parts of the ecosystem are directly or indirectly dependent on each other through the food system or food web, energy flow and the biogeochemical cycles whereby the balance of the system is maintained. This is all natural and all parts of the ecosystem exist in a delicate balance of interdependency. Thoughtless human intervention into the natural system disturbs the whole balance.

From the above discussion on Hinduism, we may come to the conclusion that this religion fosters the union of individual atman with the universal Brahma. All entities are manifestations of Brahma having individual and interdependent existence. They emerge from Brahma and are ultimately reabsorbed in Brahma. This philosophical thought behind

Hinduism that all is one and there can be no conquest of nature in reality needs to be instilled in the minds and hearts of modern technologically oriented mind to block environmental damage and disaster. Hindu environmental ethics thus upholds harmony between man and nature. Harmony is already there, one needs to discover it, to realize it. Subbarao says, "Since Brahman and Nature are one, we must see the Supreme Being in the whole world, and the whole world in Him"²⁴.

Christianity

Thoughts concerning nature, our duties and obligations towards the same are found both in the Old Testament and the New Testament. Although many authors have argued that Christianity advocated absolute human control over nature, there are places where the religion also advocated human responsibility towards nature. The teaching of the Old and New Testaments further uphold that God is the sole creator of Nature and he has entrusted the human beings to take care of nature. These teachings instill in human beings a sense of responsibility towards nature which further promotes faithfulness to God and respect, honour, kind and sympathetic attitude towards non-human nature. Such teachings promote development of harmonious relation between man and environment which is conducive for the maintenance of ecological balance.

The biblical teachings also promote the belief that God is the absolute Creator of the Universe and the human beings are the stewards responsible for caring of nature, but the continuity and preservation of the same lies upon the mercy of God²⁵ (Snyder, 164). God has created Nature and instilled life in it in the forms of plants, animals, humans and all living organisms. In this sense humans are not differentiated from the rest of God's creation. The Bible further states that "every speck of the Creation has His divine hand in it; so no human being has the absolute right to destroy it"²⁶. One may thus say that environmental crisis of the present century can be solved to a great extent if man follows the teachings of Christianity.

Islam

In the holy book of the Islam, writings on the conservation of nature are found. The Quran admits that all natural occurrences take place due to

²⁴ Crawford, S. Cromwell, *Dilemmas of Life and Death: Hindu Ethics in a North American Context*. State University of New York Press, 1995, pp.202.

²⁵ Thomas-Clapp, Megan Brooke, and Daniel K. Brannan. "Evolutionary Ethics and Christian Stewardship." *European Journal of Science and Theology*, vol. 14, no. 2, 2018, p. 16.

²⁶ Dwivedi, O. P., *Environmental Ethics: Our Dharma to the Environment*. Sanchar Pub. House, 1994, p. 87.

the existence of natural law or natural order and human intervention into nature with the motive of artificialising it should not cross its limit. Human beings are created by God or Allah, they ought to serve the divine by taking care of God's creation, i.e. nature and thereby “serve as a mirror to reflect the beautiful image of God”²⁷. The writings of Quran uphold the fact that a delicate balance exists in nature and all natural occurrences take place in accordance to the laws of nature. The Almighty or Allah is the Creator of the Universe and human beings are nothing but his creation and are made to serve him. They are not given the absolute ownership of the natural world nor the permission to alter God's divine creation in accordance to their selfish desire which disturbs the delicate balance of nature. The Quran prescribes punishment for such act on the part of humans, i.e. accountability before God after death. The Holy Quran further states that God has enriched the earth with all His creations meant for proper and judicious utilization. Over utilization of nature's beautiful resources in the name of development and progress disturbing the natural balance and bringing about deterioration of the environmental quality especially on the part of man is considered as *fasad* in Islam which is a crime and is punishable.

The concept of *tawheed* in Islam meaning unity of God fosters conservation and maintenance of ecological balance²⁸. Unity in this sense means unity of mankind and nature, i.e. flora, fauna and the physical environment. Development of harmonious relationship amongst all natural entities including man obviously promotes conservation of nature and maintenance of ecological balance as said earlier. The Quran further states that all natural occurrences take place due to *sunnah* or the natural law of God and human beings should accept this law as the will of the Creator. Any attempt on the part of the Homo sapiens to change or transform this law will create ecological imbalance or *fasad* which, as already mentioned, is punishable. Respect and reverence for all natural entities is expressed clearly in the verses of the Holy Quran²⁹. The Quran also states that God permits judicious utilization of nature without wastage, destruction, over utilization and transformation. God has permitted human beings to reside on earth as tenant and not as the owner and he has been entrusted with the responsibility of maintaining the proper balance of nature through harmonious living and respect for all natural entities. It is the obligation on part of all individuals to respect the God-given environment.

²⁷ Gada, M. Y., “Environmental Ethics in Islam: Principles and Perspectives.” *World Journal of Islamic History and Civilization*, vol. 4, no. 4, 2014, p. 132.

²⁸ Ibid, 137.

²⁹ Ibid, 139.

Buddhism

Love, compassion, respect for life, mutual co-operation and understanding, non-violence are the core words of Buddhism. Various perspective regarding conservation and protection of nature are found in Buddhist literature. The *Metta-Suttam* prayer for example promotes existence of limitless goodwill in the whole world³⁰. The *Sutta Nipata* forbids pollution of water, destruction of forest by cutting down trees, inflicting harm to animals and several other actions on the part of humans which are adverse towards maintenance of environmental balance. Holistic view of the world fostering survival of all species-humans as well as non-humans- in harmony and co-operation with nature is encouraged in Buddhism. Buddhism also prescribes that the biotic community exists and shall continue to exist through interdependence and proper interrelationship amongst the various species.

The notion of compassion forms the core philosophy of Buddhism. The Buddha is seen as an embodiment of compassion and therefore regarded as the compassionate protector of all natural entities-humans as well as non-humans. His valuable teachings spread the notion of loving kindness and respectful treatment of all living species. It is his wisdom through which he equates human beings with the other species of the universe. The welfare of humans and non-humans are very much inter-related, interdependent and inter-connected.

The present day environmental crisis is known to all of us and has been discussed vividly in many chapters of my thesis. The greedy propensity of mankind to over utilized nature in order to fulfill his consumerist and materialistic desires has led to ecological and therefore environmental catastrophe.

To simplify one's mind, one need not eradicate all desires, but control them and live in harmony with the society and nature. It is been observed that most of the Buddhist monasteries are found in the mountains and forests where the monks can reside in harmony with nature. The serenity and calmness of the mountains and forests help the monks to culture their inner minds through meditation. The ethics of Buddhism is a matter of understanding a practice of affirming and realising the trans-human potential for enlightenment as an effect. The deeper insight in an individual is generated through the cultivation of it in humans and trans-human species and hence it becomes potential for enlightenment. This is expressed by *Shantideva* in the following way: "Just as a body which is constituted with hands and other limbs should be protected as a single entity, the whole world is divided in so many parts should be treated as

³⁰ James, Simon P., "Buddhism and Environmental Ethics." *A Companion to Buddhist Philosophy*, 2013, p. 599.

undivided one so far as its nature is concerned. If it is taken as divided, it would suffer no doubt. I should remove suffering of others because it is suffering like my own. I should help others too because they exist as I exist”³¹.

Buddhist teaching centres on the three fold training of human mind and seven factors of enlightenment. The three fold training of human mind incorporates cultivation of ethical conduct (*sila*), meditation (*samadhi*), and wisdom (*panna*) as enumerated in *Mahaparinibbanasuta* of the *Dighanikaya*. Such threefold training in turn influences the seven factors of enlightenment, viz. mindfulness (*sati*), discrimination of principles (*dhamma vikaya*), energy in pursuit of food (*virya*), rapture (*pitti*), tranquility (*passaddhi*), concentration (*samadh*) and equanimity (*uppekkha*)³². These seven factors of enlightenment bring about moral development of individuals. Such moral development enables one to develop an attitude of love and sympathy towards all. Greed and lust which is the sole cause behind environmental and societal crisis can be eradicated through the weapon of wisdom dependent on the seven factors of enlightenment and three fold training of mind. Only advice to follow the path of *Ahimsa* will be futile unless they are entitled by wisdom. This wisdom lifts an individual to a higher level of awareness, to a higher ethical sensibility which promotes sympathetic and loving attitude of individuals towards nature. Culture of the inner mind through concerted practice and discipline following the path of Buddhism can enable individuals to develop the noble qualities of patience, loving kindness and wisdom. With this inner tranquility alone outer tranquility, free from pollution may come into being.

Jainism

Benevolence, love, *Ahimsa* or non-violence, respect for living creatures is more deeply rooted in this religion. This religion “adheres to the universal law which states that life produces life, order comes of order, and peace can be achieved through peace”³³. According to Jainism intense desire for something in this material world is passion which is the sole cause of self-injury or injury to others. This needs to be controlled through control over one's speech, thought and movement. The noble qualities of truthfulness, honesty, chastity, charity, love, respect for all, benevolence should be developed in all individuals to live peacefully and in harmony

³¹ Ibid, p. 601.

³² Ibid, p. 604.

³³ Mitra, Piyali. “Jainism and Environmental Ethics: An Exploration.” *Journal of Indian Council of Philosophical Research*, vol. 36, no. 1, 2019, p. 3.

with the natural world. *Himsa* or violence through battle, Injury, hunting, adultery, and theft should be forbidden by all.

We thus see that the basic tenet of Jainism is non-violence or *Ahimsa* which is very much related to the three precepts- the right belief, the right knowledge and the right conduct. According to the *Jainis* environmental harmony can be achieved and maintained through benevolence and love for all creatures, respect, compassion and tolerance for the weak.

Conclusion

From the above discussion we may come to the conclusion that the present ecological crisis calls for promotion of eco-spirituality, a spirituality that desires a creation-centred instead of ego-centric life-style. The acceptance of a 'reverend receptive' attitude towards the natural world instead of a consumeristic and exploitive attitude by following the path of *Ahimsa* can gradually solve the present ecological crisis. Subbarao says that "spiritual responses can bring us back that harmony and wholeness between man and man, man and nature, and both with God; that is the liberation and salvation of the whole cosmos"³⁴.

References

Bassey, S. A., (2019), 'Anthropoholism'As an Authentic Tool for Environmental Management. *International Journal of Environmental Pollution and Environmental Modelling*.

Bassey, S. A., & Jr, T. M. P., (2019), Enyimba's Notion of Madukaku and The Question of Anthropocentrism In African Environmental Ethics. *Int. J. of Environmental Pollution & Environmental Modelling*, 2(3).

Capra, F., & Steindl, D., (1993), *Rast, Belonging to the Universe*, New York Harper.

Crawford, S., (1995), Cromwell. *Dilemmas of Life and Death: Hindu Ethics in a North American Context*. State University of New York Press.

Dwivedi, O.P., (1994), *Environmental Ethics: Our Dharma to the Environment*. Sanchar Pub. House.

Framarin, C.G., (2012), "Hinduism and Environmental Ethics: An Analysis and Defense of a Basic Assumption." *Asian Philosophy* 22(1):75–91.

Gada, M.Y., (2014), "Environmental Ethics in Islam: Principles and Perspectives." *World Journal of Islamic History and Civilization* 4(4):130–38.

³⁴ Wolf, Jakob, and Mickey Gjerris, "A Religious Perspective on Climate Change." *Studia Theologica - Nordic Journal of Theology*, vol. 63, no. 2, 2009, p. 119.

Goel, Aruna, *Environment and Ancient Sanskrit Literature*. Deep & Deep Publications, 2018.

James, S.P., (2013), Buddhism and Environmental Ethics. In *A Companion to Buddhist Philosophy* (pp. 599–612).

<https://doi.org/10.1002/9781118324004.ch39>

Jamieson, D., (2007), *A Companion to Environmental Philosophy*. John Wiley & Sons.

Lai, P.C., (2011), “Interreligious Dialogue and Environmental Ethics.” *Studies in Interreligious Dialogue* 21(1):5–19.

Mitra, P., (2019), Jainism and Environmental Ethics: An Exploration. *Journal of Indian Council of Philosophical Research*, 36(1), 3–22. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s40961-018-0158-6>

Nasr, S.H., (1968), *Man and Nature; The Spiritual Crisis of Modern Man*, Vikash Publishing House Pvt. Ltd, New Delhi, Bombay, Bangalore, Calcutta, Kanpur.

Oelschlaeger, M., (1996), *Caring for creation: An ecumenical approach to the environmental crisis*. Yale University Press.

Paul II, J., (1989), *Peace with God the Creator, Peace with All of Creation*. Libreria Editrice Vaticana.

Penprase, B.E., & Penprase, B.E., (2011), Creation Stories from Around the World. In *The Power of Stars* (pp. 77–98).

https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4419-6803-6_3

Söhnen-Thieme, R., (2012), “Sutton, Nicholas, Religious Doctrines in the Mahābhārata.” *Indo-Iranian Journal* 53(2):185–88.

Subbarao, S., (1985), *Ethics of Ecology and Environment*, Raj at Publication, New Delhi.

Taylor, F.S., (1945), *The Fourfold Vision*, London.

Thomas-Clapp, M.P and Brannan. D.K., (2018), “Evolutionary Ethics and Christian Stewardship.” *European Journal of Science and Theology* 14(2):13–29.

Wayman, A., Narayansvami K.A., (1982), “Thirty Minor Upanishads, Including the Yoga Upanishads.” *Philosophy East and West* 32(3).

White, L., (1967), The historical roots of our ecologic crisis. *Science*, 155(3767), 1203–1207. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.155.3767.1203>

Wolf, J., & Gjerris, M., (2009), A religious perspective on climate change. *Studia Theologica - Nordic Journal of Theology*, 63(2), 119–139. <https://doi.org/10.1080/00393380903354307>.

HUMAN SUFFERING, AS A RESULT OF THE MISUSE OF FREE WILL

Alexandru Gabriel Negoia*

alexgabrielnegoita@yahoo.com

Abstract: *This article explores the possible contributions that theology can resolve the emergent impasse between the conception of a God of love and a world of evil and suffering. I will solve the “paradox of Epicure”, in a theological way because evil is the preserve of the morality gap that we are witnessing at the moment, in a world in agony, and the deficit of morality, of rationality is the expression of the weakness of man's will, which has moved away from God. Evil comes from human imperfection, but it's somehow a cause of good.*

Keywords: *being of evil, eternal, creation, free will.*

The age-old problem of an omnipotent and compassionate God who permits human suffering is a persistent theme in theology.¹ The “theodicy” term, coined by Gottfried W. Leibniz in 1710, is use like reference mark for the rehearsal of answers.² As Alvin Plantinga notes, “when theist (or any person) answers the question ‘Whence evil?’ or ‘Why does God permit evil?’ he is giving a theodicy”.³ Perhaps, the proposal of Leibniz lies in the ontological and theological dilemma outlined by Epicure (341 B.C. - 270 B.C.): “Is he willing to present evil, but no able? then he is impotent. Is he able, but not willing? then he is malevolent. Is he both able and willing? whence then is evil?”.⁴

* **PhD Student, Political Sciences Faculty, Bucharest University.**

¹ There is a large bibliography on the subject. See mainly, John Bowker, *Problems of Suffering in Religions of the World* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1970), p.p.54-111.; Oliver Leaman, *Evil and Suffering in Jewish Philosophy*, Cambridge University Press, 1997), p.130; Peter Koslowski, ed., *The Origin and the Overcoming of Evil and Suffering in the World Religions* (Netherland: Kluwer Academic Publisher, 2001) p.p.100-130; Anthony J. Tambasco, ed., *The Bible on Suffering: Social and Political Implications* (New Jersey: Paulist Press, 2002) pp. 58-121.;

² See his, *Theodicy: Essays on the Goodness of God, the Freedom of Man, and the Origin of Evil* (Illinois: Open Court Publishing, 1990), p. 15.

³ Alvin Plantinga, *God, Freedom, and Evil* (Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans, 2002), p. 10.

⁴ David Hume, *Dialogues Concerning Maturai Religion* (London: Penguin Books, 1990), pp. 108-109. See Kenneth Surin, “Theodicy?” *Marvard Theological Review* 76.2 (1983): 225. Cf. James Keller, *Problem of Evil and the Power of God* (Great Britain: MPG Book, 2007), pp. 7-30.

However, the image of a fair God cannot be reducing as a philosophical extrapolation. The *theodicy*, as theological project, it grows to the shade of the cosmic conflict between God and Satan and it is as old as this.⁵

In this brief reflection, we prefer the phrase “suffering theology” instead of “theodicy”, as platform for the obtaining, and consequent development, of answers. We deduce that the image and the concept of God are the necessary hermeneutic paradigm for a correct understanding of the Christian doctrines in general and of this topic in particular. We understand for “image” the particular perception that each believer has of God and for “concept”, the different approaches and definitions, at diachronic level, in the Christian theology. As result, the theodicy is a constituent piece of the suffering theology.

The expression “suffering” refers to the being’s alteration of the constituent thing. Normally, pain is thought to give rise to suffering. However, suffering is not simply our reactions to physical pain. It is our reaction to many kinds of events and circumstance of which physical pain is the one and generally, not the most dreadful. Human suffering falls under the broad phenomenon of evil. There are two types of evil –moral evil and physical evil, which some people refer to as natural evil. Moral evil is internal to the agent. Physical evil is external to the agent. Moral evil is simply sin – offence against God. Physical evil consists of all the unpleasant things that happen to us as human beings. According to some people, physical suffering is often, not always, the result of moral evil.

From the explanations above, it is clear that the term ‘suffering’ is closely allied to the concepts of evil and pain. Human suffering abounds all over the world. It is part of the problem of evil. Epicurus is supposed to have given the problem of evil the classic formulation as follows: *Either God would remove evil out of this world, and cannot; or He can, and will not; or He has neither the power nor will; or He has both the power and the will. If He has the will, and not the power, this shows weakness, which is contrary to the nature of God. If He has the power, and not the will, this is malignity, and is no less contrary to His nature. If He is neither able nor willing, He is both impotent and malignant, and consequently cannot be God. If He is both willing and able (which alone is*

⁵ About *theodicy* in the Greco-Romans thought see Roman Garrison, *Why are You Silence, Lord?* (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000). For Judaism perceptions on this topic see Jacob Neusner, “Theodicy in Judaism”, in *Theodicy in the World of the Bible* (ed. Antti Laato and Johannes C. de Moor; Bilingual Concordance to the Targum of the Prophets Series; Leiden: Brill, 2003), 685-727. On Qumran perspective see James A. Sanders, *Suffering as Divine Discipline in the Old Testament and Post-biblical Judaism* (Colgate Rochester Divinity School bulletin 28; Rochester, N.Y.: Colgate Rochester Divinity School, 1955);

consonant to the nature of God), then whence comes evil, or why does He not prevent it? (Hunnex, 1986:35).

Through history, the theologians have presented different conjectures, in detriment of the image of God. Gloria L. Schaab literally states that “the attribution of immutability, impassibility, and unmitigated omnipotence to God is no longer theoretically defensible, theologically viable, or pastorally efficacious in view of the insidious and multifaceted presence of pain, death, and suffering in the human and nonhuman cosmos”. Possibly this is because the different proposals, in diverse levels, have been elaborate from an anthropological perspective.⁶

The different approaches, in various cases, have raised serious theological conflicts, to the point of questioning the same existence of God. The Bible, honorable just by lips, it occupies the second place in the search of answers for this theological *impasse*. The traditions, so much religious as social, have become in the new canon. It is in this pluralistic context, with a clear anthropocentric shade -that excludes the divine and non-human reality- that the non-biblical positions find fertile land, and the image and the concept of God are adulterated.

I admit that a good and loving God’s coexistence with evil in the world is not an easy thing to explain. However, since I am not writing this article to debunk the stand of nonbelievers who denigrate the idea of a Creator God; but to console readers who might have problems with suffering, and also to strengthen the faith of those who may have believed in God but are being threatened with temptation to fall into fatalism, my position is that God teaches us valuable lessons through suffering. We may experience suffering to make us humble, grow stronger, and equip us to comfort others in their suffering. These reasons may not be convincing enough, but one consolation we can give ourselves in times of suffering is that God always knows what is best, and he never makes a mistake.

The problem of suffering which is also the problem of evil is both intellectual and emotional⁷. The intellectual problem of suffering is about how to give a rational explanation to the existence of God and suffering in the world. When people suffer, their minds grapple with the question “why me?”

The human being wants to know whether there is a reason behind his suffering. The question of “why me?” in times of suffering stems from the

⁶ Gloria L. Schaab, *The Creative Suffering of the Triune God* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2007), 13. For an excellent work, that combines historical, theological and literary analysis of the patristic theological reflection on this subject see Paul Gavrilyuk, *The Suffering of the Impassible God: The Dialectics of Patristic Thought* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2005), pp. 9-121.

⁷ J.P. Moreland, and W.L. Craig, *Philosophical Foundation for a Christian Worldview*. Downers Grove, Illinois: InterVarsity Press, 2003 p. 67.

theological answers to the question “What is God really like?”⁸ Christian theologians have answered this question by saying “God is all-Powerful; God is good’. Thus the problem of suffering has a theological dimension. Christians believe in a God who is totally, thoroughly good, with no badness in him whatsoever. It follows that a person who has a problem will ask “why has God allowed it?”⁹ (Pawson, 2007). If God is all-powerful and all-loving, then why should his creation suffer? In other words, where is God when people suffer? How does he wrestle with our suffering?

For many people, the problem of suffering is not really an intellectual problem; it is an emotional problem. The emotional problem of suffering concerns how to comfort those who are suffering and how to dissolve the emotional dislike of a God who would permit such sufferings. Emotionally, people suffer hurt inside, and are perhaps bitter against a God who would permit them or others to suffer so. They ask, “Why me?”, “Why did God allow this to happen to me?” Many “whys” are poetic questions, symbolic ways to express the depths of one’s misery.

God is not a distant Creator or impersonal ground of being, but a loving Father who shares our sufferings and hurts with us. God does not stand idly by, coolly observing the suffering of his creatures. He enters into and shares our suffering. He endured the anguish of seeing his son, the second person of the Trinity, consigned to the bitterly cruel and shameful death on the cross.

Some theologians claim that God cannot suffer. I believe they are wrong. God’s capacity for suffering, I believe is propositional to his greatness; it exceeds our capacity for in the same measure as his capacity for knowledge exceeds ours. Christ was prepared to endure the agonies of hell itself; and God, the Lord of universe, was prepared to endure the suffering consequent upon his son’s humiliation and death. He was prepared to accept this suffering in order to overcome sin, and death, and the evils that affect our world, and to confer on us a life more glorious than we can imagine. So we do not know why God permits evil; we do know, however, that he was prepared to suffer on our behalf, to accept suffering of which we can form no conception.¹⁰

The suffering is a common denominator or inherent feature to the fall human race, it is one of the paces that build are daily reality. The problem

⁸ M.J. Erickson, *Christian Theology*, 2nd ed., Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book, 2001, pp. 289-307.

⁹ D. Pawson, *Why does God allow natural disasters?* Bradford: Tera Nova Publications, 2007, p. 134.

¹⁰ A.C. Plantinga, *God, freedom, and evil*. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Eerdmans, 1974, p.36.

is unavoidably much more pressing for Christian thinking, which believes in the one God as the God of world-reconciling love.¹¹

When we go through pain and suffering, it is important to understand that God is not happy. He did not initially create pain, grief, and suffering as part of his plan for mankind in the original perfect state of humankind. Everything he created was very good (Genesis 1:31). There was no disease, drought, wars and catastrophes, death, and sin in the life of the first people God created. There was invasion of the earth by Satan after the rebellion of Lucifer in heaven (Isaiah 14:12-14; Ezekiel 28:12-15)). Then Satan planned to destroy the relationship between God and humankind by craftily devising temptation for the first people God made in order to make them sin against God and incur his displeasure. Adam and Eve yielded to the deceit of the devil in the Garden of Eden and brought a sin barrier between God and themselves, and thereby marred the original sweet, holy fellowship they had with their Maker (Genesis 3:8-9).

The ultimate consequences were the separation from God's presence (but not from his love), punishment, and curse from God. These consequences invited all the trials, temptations, diseases, oppression, accidents, disasters, wars, calamities, suffering, pain, evil, and all the varieties of problems that have continually plagued and devastated humanity (Genesis 3:1- 24). Thus it is not God who makes us suffer. He does not intentionally and willingly bring suffering as part of his affliction on men (Lamentations 3:33). Rather, he allows suffering, pain, trouble, disaster, calamity, and grief to come into our lives for his divine purpose, most of which our minds are too finite to comprehend and explain (Job 1 and 2).

God allows trials and sufferings in our lives for a purpose. Sometimes allows us to go through suffering for a season in order that he might teach us some important lessons, so that we can become humbled, strengthened in our faith, and toughened in our character (Psalm 23:4). God permits suffering to come on his people so that he can get their attention (Psalm 103:4; 119:67, 92; Exodus 15:26). When we suffer, God might be preparing us for greater blessings ahead (John 15:1-5; Romans 8:18; 2Corinthians 4:17,18).

Freedom without conscience is the worst weapon in people's hands. Always, using all sorts of arguments unrelated to reality, but using the main alibi of freedom, there have been all kinds of abuses on people, killing them in the name of an unlimited action to "release" those who want power at all costs being allowed at any time. Who created evil? Not man, by inappropriate use of his freedom?

¹¹ Cf. Wolfhart Tannenbergh, *Systematic Theology* (trad. Geoffrey W. Bromiley; Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans, 1991-1998), 3:632.

Man was created good by God, but through his wrong choices and passionate deeds, he came to be the one who spreads evil throughout the universe. No one's forcing a man to do harm. It is right that the devil tempts us, that the negative examples of the people around us influence us, but this influence does not in any way enslave our freedom. On the contrary, it should lead us all the more to avoid the work of evil. But we continue to love the "poor who hates us, the devil, and to run away from the "rich who loves us," that is, Christ. And the temptation to do evil does not begin and does not end with Adam and Eve, but begins again with every man who is born in this world: "I say that man was born free, that evil did not preexist, and that man did not receive from him the power to commit evil. Man had from the beginning the power to obey or not god's will. This power was called free will. How was evil born? Once created, man received certain commandments from God, which he did not fulfill. So evil began with disobedience to divine commandments. It cannot be said that he has always existed, because the one who committed it has begun."¹²

We continue to follow Adam's wrong decision by our own will. Of course, we can bow our ear to the arguments so "valid" of international political factors, to believe that the invasion of a territory was done for the "liberation" of those living there, that there are always "collateral damage", that no the love of power and vain glory underpins the killing of 100,000 Christians annually, especially in African and far eastern countries, but we must ask ourselves: what have we done with our freedom? Where do we still find cleansing in this freedom to shed the blood of our brothers—because my neighbor is every man, not just one of faith with me, not just the one of a "color" with me, or just the one I know—to find pleasure in that freedom and power absolutely bring, directly, only death fruits?

Why does God allow all this? There was no man in this universe who, seeing his suffering or that of other people, did not honestly ask himself this question. However, almost no one has come to the conclusion that he, the former, has abdicated since the good use of his freedom. We all believe that the freedom of others has led us here, or worse, that God is either powerless or indifferent. No one blames themselves first, because the guilt belongs to others, not us. However, as Russian writer Dostoyevsky says, "we are all guilty of everything." We are guilty of all the misfortunes that happen either directly, through our loveless decisions, or indirectly, by our guilty silence or by the indifference with which we deal with all these dramas of mankind. I took God's gifts and turned them into punishments for other people, because the freedom of some came to be the most terrible drama of other people, completely innocent.

¹² Metodiou of Olympus, "About Free Will", XVII, in: *Writings*, p. 230.

Why didn't God deprive us of the gift of freedom? God, wanting to honor man, provided him with the faculty of knowing the superior goods and being able to do what he wanted, then urged him to do good without depriving him of free will, but only by indicating this path. Although he has received the exhortation and even God's command to do good, he can do what he wants. Just as a parent urges his son to study mathematics, and to that end he shows him its benefits, but leaves him to decide whether or not he/she studies it, so do I think God is urging man to obey His commandments but he does not deprive him of the power to decide for himself in this regard. Moreover, the very fact that God urges, assumes that man's will and power have not been suppressed. Then, if God gives a commandment, do so that man may enjoy superior goods; this is the result of his obedience to the divine command. Therefore, God commands not for the sake of suppressing the power he gave man, but to give him afterwards, rightly, something better, this gift coming as a reward for his obedience to God, for man obeyed when he could not subject.

God has given us freedom to do, of his own volition, what is good, not to end up doing the good like servants, but like sons. But we, taking freedom, have converted it into thoughts, words and deeds by which I suppress others. The gifts are not taken back, but the right reward awaits every man who has used them badly, just as the mercy of God will comfort him who uses them well.¹³

An eminently good God can create only good things, and from this it follows that evil has appeared not by the act of creation exercised by God, but as a result of the removal of man from good. Evil is not a phenomenon or a principle, but rather a lack, an absence of good. The moment man walks away from God, using his free will, he already begins to perform evil. Just as darkness is an absence of light, as is evil nothing more than an absence of good, it is like the shadow accompanying the withdrawal of light.¹⁴ In this context we can also understand the words of the Savior who is not with me is against me (Lc. 11, 23), for he who does not choose to do good falls without realizing the side of evil.¹⁵

And that is because there is no middle ground, a neutral ground between Good and evil, who is not with Christ can only be against Him. The act of choosing whose side to be becomes a voluntary act. It's up to us whether we receive light in our lives or if we agree to live in the darkness of

¹³ G.R. Lear, *Happy Lives and the Highest Good*, New Jersey, Princeton University Press, 2006, cap. 1, p. 96.

¹⁴ Saint Gregory of Nyssa: *Ascetical Works*. Translated by Virginia W. Callahan, Washington, Catholic University Press, vol. 58. 1967, p. 134.

¹⁵ The Holy Scripture, *Luke*, cap 11, verse 23, Bucharest, The Publishing House of the Biblical and Missionary Institution of The Romanian Orthodox Church, 2006, p. 612.

God's unknowingness. Let us therefore reject this "voluntary blindness" and be on Christ's side so that, by benefiting from His protection, we may follow the path of Good, the way of salvation to our souls.

References

Bowker J., (1970), *Problems of Suffering in Religions of the World*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, pp. 54-111.

Erickson, M.J., (2001), *Christian Theology*, 2nd ed., Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Books, pp. 289-307.

Garrison, R., (2000), *Why are You Silence, Lord?*, Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, p. 123.

Gavrilyuk, P., (2005), *The Suffering of the Impassible God: The Dialectics of Patristic Thought*, New York: Oxford University Press, pp. 9-121.

The Holy Scripture, Luke, cap 11, verse 23, Bucharest, The Publishing House of the Biblical and Missionary Institution of The Romanian Orthodox Church, 2006, p. 612.

Hume, D., (1990), *Dialogues Concerning Maturai Religion*, London: Penguin Books, pp. 108-109.

Keller, J., (2007), *Problem of Evil and the Power of God*, Great Britain: MPG Book, pp. 7-30.

Koslowski, P., (2001), *The Origin and the Overcoming of Evil and Suffering in the World Religions*, Netherland: Kluwer Academic Publisher, pp. 100-130.

Leaman, O., (1997), *Evil and Suffering in Jewish Philosophy*, Cambridge University Press, p. 130.

Lear, G.R., (2006), *Happy Lives and the Highest Good*, New Jersey, Princeton University Press, cap. 1, p. 96.

Leibniz, G.W., (1990), *Theodicy: Essays on the Goodness of God, the Freedom of Man, and the Origin of Evil*, Illinois: Open Court Publishing, p. 15

Moreland, J.P. and Craig, W.L., (2003), *Philosophical Foundation for a Christian Worldview*. Downers Grove, Illinois: InterVarsity Press, p. 67.

Neusner, J., (2003), "Theodicy in Judaism", in *Theodicy in the World of the Bible*, ed. Antti Laato and Johannes C. de Moor; Bilingual Concordance to the Targum of the Prophets Series; Leiden: Brill, pp. 685-727.

Pawson, D., (2007), *Why does God allow natural disasters?* Bradford: Tera Nova Publications, p. 134.

Plantinga, A.C., (1974), *God, freedom, and evil*. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Eerdmans, p. 36.

Saint Gregory of Nyssa: *Ascetical Works*. Translated by Virginia W. Callahan, Washington, Catholic University Press, vol. 58. 1967, p. 134.

Schaab, G., (2007), *The Creative Suffering of the Triune God*, New York: Oxford University Press, p. 13.

Surin, K., (1983), "Theodicy?" *Marvard Theological Review* 76.2, p. 225.

Tambasco, A., (2002), *The Bible on Suffering: Social and Political Implications*, New Jersey: Paulist Press, 2002, pp. 58-121.

Tannenberg, W., (1998), *Systematic Theology* (trad. Geoffrey W. Bromiley; Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans, 3:632.

LIVE AND LET LIVE: MAKING SENSE OF SAMUEL BASSEY'S 'ANTHROPOHOLISM' AS ETHICS FOR ENVIRONMENTAL MANAGEMENT

Gabriel Asuquo*

gabrielmarcel76@yahoo.com

Abstract: *The paper takes a critical look at Samuel Bassey's anthropoholism as ethics for **environmental management**. **Though there are a plethora of theories that seek to guide human actions as** regards to the use of the environment. Some of these theories are either leaning towards anthropocentrism or holistic environmental ethic. Some of these conceptualizations of the environment either places humans as the centre of the ecosystem and ontology or interpret everything in the environment about human needs. While some see humans as fractured part of the environment. Nonetheless, the concern of Bassey's 'anthropoholism' is to bridge the gap between some of this conceptualization especially between anthropocentric theories and holistic environmental ethics. Thus, this paper argues that this move of Bassey's 'anthropoholism' is ambitious but it lacks a proper ontological grounding. The paper employs the method of critical-constructive method.*

Keywords: *philosophy, environment, ontology, ethics, anthropocentrism*

Introduction

The environment is an integrative system that comprises both human and nonhuman entities, which houses all life forms. As an integrative system, it is designed to promote and protect life in a sustainable manner. Though in recent time there have been questions about how humans can relate with the environment and at the same time preserve its resources for other inhabitants of the environment. In an attempt to answer the above questions, philosophers, environmentalists, and policymakers have subscribed to various ethical theories and values that can serve as a theoretical vision that will inform the ways humans should relate to the environment. One of such theory is anthropocentrism and the values it espouses.

According to Bassey, anthropocentrism and the attitude it espouses is responsible for man's domineering tendencies towards other beings within the environment, which has consequently led to environmental

* Lecturer, College of social and management science, Achievers University, Owo, Ondo State, Nigeria.

decadence¹. Nonetheless, Bassey christened this version of anthropocentrism as 'strong anthropocentrism'. Hence, in line with thinkers like Thomson (2004)², Bassey (2019) sees strong anthropocentrism as being problematic in the management of a more sustainable environment. Thus he opines that the necessary condition that can enable peace and fulfilment of human potential among humans and other beings is the total rejection or rehabilitation of all supremacy ideology which anthropocentrism theories represented. Therefore, the methodological and normative pathway to achieve the above is what Bassey called 'anthropoholism'³.

Hence, this paper shall take a critical look at the concept of 'anthropoholism', its ontological foundation and normative values for the management of the environment. More so, the paper will assess the merits of 'anthropoholism' as an Afrocentric alternative for curtailing eco-catastrophes. The paper sees Bassey's 'anthropoholism' as providing the normative values that are needed to promote a more integrative and mutually transformative relationship between human and nonhuman entities in the environment. Nevertheless, the paper argues that the ontological basis of 'anthropoholism' is shaken as such there is a need to work out an ontological basis which must be based on Afrocentric ontology that sees mutual and collaborative relationship as the primordial basis of reality. Afrocentric ontology sees being as relational and complementary reality which can be grasped from the purview of binary complementary, which is different from the western ontology that sees reality from the purview of binary opposition⁴. It is this kind of ontology one can talk about mutual respect, responsibilities, duty, and inclusiveness.

Bassey's Anthropoholism and Its Assumptions

Conceptually, 'anthropoholism' is made up of two words namely *anthropo* which is a Greek word that means man or human being and *holism* which is a theory that holds that the whole is more important than its single part⁵. The conjoining of these twin words of *anthropo* and *holism* gave rise to the theory of 'anthropoholism'. According to Bassey, the central concern of anthropoholism is to conceptualize a theory for

¹ Bassey, Samuel Akpan, 'Anthropoholism' As an Authentic Tool for Environmental Management." *International Journal of Environmental Pollution and Environmental Modelling* (2019), p. 160.

² Thomson, Iain, "Ontology and Ethics at the Intersection of Phenomenology and Environmental Philosophy." *Inquiry (United Kingdom)*, vol. 47, no. 4, 2004, pp. 380.

³ Bassey, Samuel, *op.cit.*, p. 164.

⁴ Oluwole, Sophie, *Socrates and Ọrúnmilà: Two Patron Saints of Classical Philosophy*. Lagos: Ark Publishers, 2014.

⁵ Bassey Samuel, *op.cit.*, p. 161.

environmental ethics that is holistic in outlook and accommodating in approach. As a theoretical vision, it seeks to bridge the gap between anthropocentric and holistic environmental ethics. The central idea of anthropoholism is that humans are an intrinsic part of the environment and not above or supreme to the environment. Hence, human existence is conditioned and foster within the context of the environment. 'Anthropoholism' sees the incomprehensible nature of strong anthropocentrism and the limited vision of eco-centric environmental ethics and its move to blend the strength of these duo approaches for environmental management. The central concern is that even though human beings are the measure of all things in the environment, they are not the only entity that inhabits the environment. They must know that as they employ their technology to explore and exploit the environment they should recognize the fact that other entities must exist. This is because Bassey (2019) conceived the environment as an interconnected and interdependent web or whole which humans are an integral part, and the harmonious coexistence of humans with other nonhuman entities is the *primal facie* for ecological balancing that is needed for human survival and the survival of other beings within the environment⁶.

Therefore, it is futile for humans to think that they can exist without the environment or its imperatives. However, this thinking of placing human needs above environmental considerations is responsible for the brutal devastation and pillage of the environment due to uncontrolled human activities. While strong anthropocentrism places human needs above and over environmental considerations, weak anthropocentrism, on the other hand, sees human needs as being subordinate to environmental imperatives and considerations⁷. Hence, Bassey and Pimaro (2019) see weak anthropocentrism has been compatible with holism and it fits to form the normative values of 'anthropoholism'⁸.

The fundamental assumption of 'anthropoholism' is that human continuous existence can only be meaningful when human beings utilize the resources of the environment without plundering it. The idea is that utilize the resources of the environment but at the same time put in place a mechanism for replacement. This is because it is this mindset of plundering without a replacement that is at the root cause of the eco-catastrophe we are witnessing today. Therefore, anthropoholism is a move to bring human consciousness to the imperatives of environmental

⁶ Ibidem, p. 162.

⁷ Ibidem, p. 163.

⁸ Bassey, Samuel Akpan, and Thomas Micah Pimaro Jr. "Enyimba's Notion of Madukaku and The Question of Anthropocentrism in African Environmental Ethics." *International Journal of Environmental Pollution and Environmental Modelling* (2019).

sustainability that is grounded on the axiological principle of 'if you cannot replace don't plunder'. This where anthropoholism becomes a novel ethical theory for the management of the environment.

'Anthropoholism' sees human and nonhuman entities as 'missing links'⁹ that must be present for more mutual complementation and interdependent relationship for mutual survival. Humans need other beings to survival, likewise, other beings need humans for survival¹⁰. Anthropoholism sees humans as part of the biotic community just like plants, other animals, insects or birds. However, this does not negate the intrinsic prey-predator relationship that underlines the operations of the natural environment. Human beings can be predators to other beings and they can be prey to other beings also¹¹. Anthropoholism advocates that humans as the being that is endowed with rationality should show care to the environment and show respect to other animals.

Therefore the attitude that should guide the human relationship with the environment is one of mutual understanding and mutual preservation without being egoistic and domineering at the same time. From an ethical point of view, anthropoholism acknowledges the fact that humans should strive to meet their needs with the available resources in the environment, but it should be done in such a way that excessive dominance of the environment ought to be minimized. Ultimately, the mindset that should enforce this should be such that sees the human place as been dependent on other members of the environment.

Rehabilitation of Anthropocentrism with Bassey's Anthropoholism

Anthropocentrism is an ethical or axiological theory that sees man (anthropo) as the center of ontology and the ecosystem. In other words, everything in nature exists to serve human needs and trivial desires¹². Nature is seen about man and man is the sole administrator, manipulator, and keeper of nature. Better still, nature exists to serve the pleasure of man. Though this theory has two versions, namely strong anthropocentrism, and weak anthropocentrism. The former sees nature as serving human needs and trivial desires, while the latter sees man as part of nature and he must his needs within the limit that have imposed. This entails that there ought to be some measure of self-control and self-

⁹ Asouzu, Innocent, *The Method and Principles of Complementary Reflection in and beyond African Philosophy*. Calabar: University of Calabar Press, 2004.

¹⁰ Bassey, Samuel Akpan, and John Gabriel Mendie. "Alexis Kagame's Ontological Categories." *Cogito: Multidisciplinary Res. J.* 11 (2019): 52.

¹¹ Bassey Samuel, *cited works*, p. 161.

¹² Nolt, John, "Anthropocentrism and Egoism." *Environmental Values*, vol. 22, no. 4, 2013, pp. 441.

restraint on the human decision as regards the environment for the sake of human continuous existence.

Bassey (2019) was right when he avers that we cannot conceive any ethical theory for the environment without some human imperatives or consideration. This is because it is human beings that are doing the reflection and it is the human self that is determining what ought to be the case in the environment. Human considerations will necessarily be included in any theory formation that seeks to guide human actions in the environment. Therefore, anthropocentrism has a role to play but its role must be about the whole, in this case, the environment or nature, as different from making or placing man as the sole reference. The implications are that if we see man as part of nature it will necessarily mean that man needs some control mechanism about the way he uses the resources of the environment because he is not the only user of such resources. Unlike strong anthropocentrism that places man as supreme to nature and everything in it exists to serve human needs and desires.

Realistically, strong anthropocentrism is promoting the mindset of exclusion that is responsible for some of the devastating activities of man on nature¹³. Consequently, we are now witnessing many eco-catastrophe that man has caused the environment in the form of global warming, climate change, ecological imbalances and the depleting of nature's resources. There is a need to rehabilitate anthropocentrism, especially strong anthropocentrism.

In attempt to reconstruct the ontological basis and normative values that should guide the rehabilitation of anthropocentrism, Bassey (2019) opines that man should be seen as an integral part of the environment and his action should be assessed from his interdependence with everything in the environment including animate and inanimate entities¹⁴. This calls for a paradigm shift from a man-centered discourse to an environmental-centered discourse. This paradigm shift is anthropoholism, which acknowledges man central role in obligation and ontology, and also sees man as part and one with nature, not over nature or supreme to nature. This implies that instead of seeing the environment as serving human needs and desires, it sees human beings existing as a part of the environment and the environment which is the whole is more important than the man who is just a single part. More so, instead of viewing the resources in the environment as being exclusively the preserve of man, man is a resource in the environment. The environment did not exist for

¹³ Anderson-Gold, S., Objective Value in Environmental Ethics: Towards a Reconstituted Anthropocentric Ethic. *Social Philosophy Today*, 18, 2002, 111–124.

¹⁴ Bassey, Samuel, cited works, p. 161.

the sole sake of man but exists for its own and it is a conscious self in its right.

The importance of anthropoholism is that it sees humans as part and one with nature, which entails that humans should be responsible in the way they relate to the environment. This act of responsibility necessarily means that human conduct should be about the continued survival of the 'whole' because cut off from the 'whole' human life is meaningless and it can relapse to nothingness. Therefore to avoid the possible relapse of human life into nothingness due to human uncontrolled activities, there is a need to evoke some sense of duty to the environment. This means that the hallmark of anthropoholism is that man and the environment is in a symbiotic mutual relationship of interdependence.

Critical Remarks on Bassey's Anthropoholism

According to Osuala (2019), Bassey's anthropoholism is not error-proof in the sense that it is laden with some epistemic and ethical flaws. He criticized anthropoholism for being grounded on humanistic philosophy which is also part of the problem of the environment¹⁵. Using eco-centric perfectionism¹⁶ as a prism, he criticizes Bassey's anthropoholism as being human-centered. This means that Bassey constructs 'anthropoholism' as an alternative to anthropocentrism but on a critical look it is anthropocentrism in a disguised form. He also accused Bassey's anthropoholism as being in swift to adopt weak anthropocentrism as its fulcrum without doing a deliberate exposition of it. This is because for Osuala (2019), Bassey sees weak anthropocentrism as containing a self-control mechanism that enabled humans to prefer what will advance their wellbeing¹⁷. Osuala further (2019) argues that human preference is always in an ambivalent tension. This is because humans due to their instinct of self-preservation always seek means that promote their interest in all situations which may be in exclusion of the interest and wellbeing of other beings in the environment¹⁸. Therefore, for Bassey to use weak anthropocentrism as a fulcrum of his thought is resting on faulty logic.

More so, Osuala (2019) accused Bassey's 'anthropoholism' of placing the environment as a means to an end rather than an end in itself. This means that the environment exists for humans and not that the environment can exist despite humans¹⁹. Osuala (2019) avers that humans

¹⁵ Osuala Amaobi Nelson, How 'Holistic' is Anthropoholism? A Critique of Samuel Bassey's Environmental Philosophy. *Cogito – Multidisciplinary Research Journal* XI(4) December, 23-32.

¹⁶ Thomson, Iain, *cited works*, p. 380.

¹⁷ Osuala Nelson, *cited works*, p. 26.

¹⁸ Ibidem, p. 23.

¹⁹ Ibidem, p. 29.

are fractional parts of the environment and they must coordinate their activities within this logical understanding. Alsin, Osuala (2019) accused Bassey's anthropoholism of leaning towards the Judeo-Christian ethics in the sense that Bassey uses portions from the Judeo-Christian scripture to reinforce his thought²⁰. Osuala (2019) maintains that is pretentious and self-contradictory to use a platform that places humans as supreme over nature to justify an all-inclusive ethical paradigm. The appeal to religion is problematic and it will run into a problem if applied in a secular setting²¹. Osuala (2019) maintain that Bassey did not expand his thought on Anthropoholism properly²². While Osuala is of the view that Bassey did a thorough explication of weak anthropocentrism and holistic environmental ethic but in the very noetic and normative values that underpins the theory was left in shallow.

I agree with Osuala in the area of the ontological basis of anthropoholism and its normative values that underpin it have been shallow. I disagree with his position of equating anthropoholism as a mere humanistic philosophy as such it is faulty. Bassey's 'anthropoholism' is a move to bridge the gap between anthropocentric ethical theories and eco-centric theory as regards to the management of the environment. While Bassey recognized the weakness of anthropocentrism, he sees humans as an integral part of the environment as such their place cannot be ruled out from the scheme of things in the management of the environment. However, he maintains that human place must be about the environment which is the whole not human again. This is a shift in the way we ought to see the environment as humans. We are not the lord and master of the environment but an integral part of other entities and our attitude should be one of mutual interdependence. Where the eco-centric ethic of the environment sees the human being as a fractured part of the environment, anthropoholism sees humans as an integral part of the environment. Osuala's position is exclusive because it bifurcates a part of the whole. Every part of the whole is integral including humans. This is why Bassey avers that we cannot rule humans out of any ethical theory for the environment. There is merit in the above claim because it is still humans that are reflecting on the environment.

Nonetheless, my concern about Bassey's 'anthropoholism' is that it is not properly defined whether it is a variant of African holistic environmental ethics or is an independent theory that seeks to blend African ontology with the imperatives of environmental management. According to Bassey (2019:166), "Anthropoholism acknowledges the

²⁰ Ibidem, p. 26.

²¹ Ibidem, p. 30.

²² Ibidem, p. 30.

individual's central role within thought process as well as ecosystem and ontology, but admits that such is just a mere part of the environment..."²³ *A thing cannot be central and be a mere part at the same time.* It is either it is central and important or not. Except Bassey is saying that humans have a dual place in the environment. Otherwise, he is reinforcing western dualism and its flaws in the context of African holistic environmental ethics. These logical inconsistencies perhaps maybe because Bassey uses a different logical system to explain a reality that is beyond that system. In a holistic framework, all parts are important but the whole takes precedence over the individual parts. This does not negate the fact that each part has its right and freedom but the exercise of such rights and freedom must be done within the framework of mutually interdependent relationships.

Conclusion

No doubt Bassey's 'Anthropoholism' is an ambitious move to bridge the gap of anthropocentrism and holistic environmental ethics. Bassey contention is that humans are an integral part of the environment just like every other being. However, the role of humans as regards the environment should be view about the environment. The holistic ambiance of anthropoholism is that instead of man being the focal and reference point, the environment should be the reference point. Therefore, the paper argues that Bassey is right the way he rehabilitates anthropocentrism within holistic environmental ethics but the way he situated his thought makes it not clear. There are certain fundamental questions he needs to answer. Such as: is anthropoholism a variant of African environmental ethic or it is a theoretical framework to enhance human place in the environment? What ontological purview is he grounding his thought? Throughout his thought, Bassey did not make this explicitly clear for a discerning reader. Therefore, apart from the logical inconsistencies which Osuala identified and the shallow treatment of the ontological basis of anthropoholism, the theory still holds some merit of originality and creativity.

References

- Anderson-Gold, S., (2002), Objective Value in Environmental Ethics: Towards a Reconstituted Anthropocentric Ethic. *Social Philosophy Today*, 18, 111–124.
- Asouzu, Innocent, (2004), *The Method and Principles of Complementary Reflection in and beyond African Philosophy*. Calabar: University of Calabar Press.

²³ Bassey Samuel, *cited works*, p. 166.

Bassey, S.A., (2019), 'Anthropoholism' As an Authentic Tool for Environmental Management. *International Journal of Environmental Pollution and Environmental Modelling*, 160-168.

Bassey, S.A., & Pimaro Jr, T.M., (2019), Enyimba's Notion of Madukaku and The Question of Anthropocentrism in African Environmental Ethics. *International Journal of Environmental Pollution and Environmental Modelling*, 129-136.

Nolt, J., (2013), Anthropocentrism and egoism. *Environmental Values*, 22(4), 441-459.

Oluwole, S., (2014), *Socrates and Ọ̀rúnmìlà: Two Patron Saints of Classical Philosophy*. Lagos: Ark Publishers.

Osuala, A.N., (2019), How 'Holistic' is Anthropoholism? A Critique of Samuel Bassey's Environmental Philosophy. *Cogito – Multidisciplinary Research Journal* XI (4) December, 23-32.

Thomson, I., (2004), Ontology and ethics at the intersection of phenomenology and environmental philosophy. *Inquiry (United Kingdom)*, 47(4), 380-412.

THE INFORMATIVE CENTER OF THE 10TH GENDARME REGIMENT FROM SUCEAVA, IN 1940

Valentin Ioan*

ioanvalentin87@yahoo.com

Abstract: *The Informative Center of the 10th Gendarme Regiment from Suceava, in 1940, an unresearched segment of the history of the Romanian Gendarmerie, leaves the way of conducting a brief study open. This informative structure was established in April 1940 and had competence over the entire Suceava Gendarmes Regiment with a small number. This study is the result of thorough investigations of documents from archival funds, such as the General Inspectorate of the Gendarmerie, the Regional Gendarmes Inspectorates, and also other funds in the field of public order and security held by the Central National Historical Archives. The study of these documents highlights the necessity of setting up this Informative Center next to the Gendarmes Regiment Suceava, the way of organization and functioning, its activity in 1940.*

Keywords: *gendarmerie, structure, espionage, organization, foreigner, information*

On 1st of September 1939, the attack on Poland by Germany and the crushing of its army by Wehrmacht and Luftwaffe in just a few weeks represented a real warning to Romania's independence and territorial integrity¹. The approach of the war on the borders of Romania attracted urgent measures from the Romanian authorities. The government led by Armand Călinescu was thus in a difficult situation because Romania had a political and military agreement with Poland as early as 1921 and renewed in 1926 and 1931, but on 7th of September 1939, Romania became neutral². By risking the breakdown of the relations created with Berlin, Romania, by observing the principles of democracy, allowed the passage of war materials intended to support Poland in its territory, and opened the borders for Polish refugees³. In order to control the exodus of civilian and

* **PhD. Student „Ștefan cel Mare” University of Suceava, Romania.**

¹ Nuțu, Ilie, *The Gendarmerie 1918-1940*, Suceava, Teaching Staff Publishing House, 2012, p. 87.

² Gheorghe, Zaharia, *Romania's national defense policy in the interwar European context (1919-1939)*, Bucharest, Military Publishing House, 1981, pp. 244-249.

³ Popa, Costică, *Gendarmes and Polish refugees (1939-1940) in “Cultural Educational” Highlights Romanian Gendarmerie*, Bucharest, Publishing House of the Ministry of Administration and Interior, 2010, p.2.

military refugees to Romania, through Bucovina, by the Order no. 1 in September 1939, the Ministry of Internal Affairs launched disposals such as sorting, disarming and guiding refugees. In order to stop this phenomenon that became worrying for the Romanian authorities, on 18th of September 1939, the Command of the Gendarmerie⁴ organized a dam on the west line of Putna and Bacău counties, and on the south line of Tecuci, Putna and Covurlui counties just to prevent refugees to arrive disorganized in Muntenia and Transilvania. By the informative note no. 319 of December 1939, prepared by the Legion of Gendarmes Rădăuți and transmitted to the Command of the Gendarmerie Corps, 10th Gendarme Regiment Suceava, 34th Infantry Division and Rădăuți Police, we find out that Russians built in Holoșina a picket where about 100-150 soviet border guards were stationed at the frontier. They severed the telephone connection between P.T.T. Gura-Putilei's office and the former Poland, so many people have fraudulently crossed the border into Romania⁵. On 24th of December 1939, the gendarmes from the Rădăuți Legion, coordinated by the 10th Gendarme Regiment from Suceava, through their informative activity, learned that 5 polish people (Vitlisch Broneslav doctor, Gitrov Sigmund engineer, Toni Cuzvrama, Maria Zvinschi and Cristofa Clergher student, all from Warsaw) fraudulently passed from Russia to Romania through Iablonița village. At the hearings they said that they went to Romania because Russians persecuted them and sent them to Finland. They were sent by the guards to the Military Prosecutor's Office of the 8th Infantry Division Cernăuți⁶. Later, the General Staff also proposed measures that all clandestine visitors from Basarabia and Northern Bucovina, caught in border areas by border guards, gendarmes or policemen, will be considered suspects and will be kept isolated and sent immediately, without any investigation, to the closest informative body in the area of the General Staff. In these circumstances, in September 1940, the General Directorate of Police transmitted to the subordinate structures that among the refugee officials from Basarabia and Northern Bucovina, there were some who were repatriating with special espionage missions in favor of the U.R.S.S.⁷

In order to carry out its tasks, the Rural Gendarmerie focused on gathering information on public order and state security, while during

⁴ Central National Historical Archives, *General Inspectorate of the Gendarmerie* Fund. 2/1893-1948, pp. 49-50.

⁵ *Ibidem*, dos.56/1939, f. 1.

⁶ *Ibidem*, f. 4.

⁷ Constantin I. Stan, Alexandru Gaiță, *Soviet actions of espionage in Romania (1940-1941)*, in the Yearbook of the National Archives Bacău Acta Bacoviensia no. VI, Onești, Magic Print Publishing House, 2011, p. 322.

1939-1940, hostile actions against the Romanian state were intensified, actions carried out by forces from inside and outside. According to the commander of the Gendarmerie, the informative activity carried out at the level of the gendarmes inspectorate, between October 1939 and March 1940, „develops only sporadically, and from October 1939 until now, it has proven that the current bases on which it is based the organization and functioning of the gendarmerie information service are not the most appropriate because: the information reported to us by the subordinate bodies, that is, by regiments and legions, does not show enough seriousness, which gave rise to multiple wishes when they were communicated to the interested higher bodies. Issues such as communism, irredentism or legionaryism were not targeted, but rather scattered people and issues which, gathered together, cannot present a clear picture of the police situation in the given territory. This is due to the lack of specialization in the informative and counter-informative field, as well as the multiple attributions of another order with which the territorial formations are burdened. For this reason, we can say, from the regiment to the gendarmerie, the informative activity is normally made in a sterile bureaucratic way”⁸.

In order to reorganize the information and counter-information service on other principles, the commander of the Gendarmerie, Ioan Bengliu, sent to his deputy, the general control officers and the commanders of Regiments 1 to 10 gendarmes the *Rules of reorganizing the information and counter-information service*, which foresaw the organization of 10 informative centers that were corresponding to the territory of the gendarmes regiments. These informative centers were to be the bodies specialized in the activity of collecting information, as well as their verification. They were about to overlap the other normal means of legions and regiments. From the point of view of hierarchical reports, the information centers were depending on the Commander of the Gendarmerie – the Gendarmerie Service. It was intended for those centers to operate for the benefit of the respective gendarmerie regiment, especially since the head of the center would have to keep the commander of the regiment informed about the activity on the informative line in his territory. Also, the commander of the regiment will be his first hierarchical chief as the governing and control body. Therefore, the Informative Center will enter the structure of the regiment as a collaborative body, not as a subordinate service. Their competence will be limited only in the informative and counter-informative field, without mixing in the attributions of the territorial formations. Each center will be run by a

⁸ Central National Historical Archives, *General Inspectorate of the Gendarmerie* Fund, dos.87/1940, f. 207-209.

senior gendarmerie officer, lieutenant colonel or major, assisted by a major or lower officer – lieutenant or captain, and a typist. The head of the center was the only one to be held responsible for the news and information that were collected, analyzed and transmitted to the other structures of national order and security. For the searching, collecting and verifying in the field activity, they will have at their disposal a variable number of covered agents, recruited from those who have taken the specialized course in command. Their distribution by informative centers will be made in relation to the police problems in the respective area. Their number was not less than 8 and bigger than 24, and they were grouped into 1-3 teams⁹. The commander had to know at all times what was the real situation in any part of the country, regarding the public order and state security problems (plots, communist nuclei, legionary nests, revisionist tendencies, the mood of the population, dissatisfaction, disturbances and concerns)¹⁰.

Information was collected from several sectors of activity:

- From all areas of public activity (from all categories of schools, from canteens, dormitories, from stables, from church, from all public and state administrations). In the primary schools, firstly targeted were the most intelligent and poor children, the refractory teachers of any subversive propaganda; in the secondary schools, the pedagogues and leaders were targeted, and in the faculties – the young people with precarious material situations¹¹;

- From all branches of private activity (private associations of all kinds, cultural, sport associations, guilds etc.), subversive religious organizations, any agglomeration of a momentary character (fairs, dance halls etc.), among the traveling merchants, craftsmen, floating workers, women with light morals, from taverns, inns, mills etc., traveling theaters, cinema circuses, meetings and gatherings of all kinds, student dormitories, workshops, factories and any industrial, agricultural or commercial enterprise;

- In churches, firstly targeted were, especially, the priests who were unsatisfied by the clerical circle, and regarding the sermons held, agents from among the parishioners were recruited;

- In public administrations, they were trying for every major institution in the area of the city of residence, as well as in the communes on the rural territory, to have a covered informant. Mayors, administrations and fiscal perceptions, tribunals and judicatures were not omitted.

⁹ *Ibidem*.

¹⁰ *Ibidem*, f. 208.

¹¹ *Ibidem*, f.219.

All this information had to be collected through permanent and occasional agents. The control of the informative activity in the field, as well as the guiding action, falls to the command of the respective gendarmerie regiment. The general and senior control officers were required to verify the informative activity of these centers and to provide them with guidance in accordance with the orders of the Gendarmerie Corps Command. The commander of the center reported the information collected, directly to the regimental commander, and then, in a very short time, by telephone, encrypted telegraph or by informative notes through postal office. These informative notes had to contain details such as: where the information was sought and who gave it, whether it is safe or not (possibly if it was verified by whom), the results obtained, the difficulties encountered and what the agencies were proposing for the future¹².

In the beginning, as an experimental part, it was established the organization of two informative centers, namely the Suceava and Bucegi Informative Centers, which, for six months, were experimenting with things provided by the commander of the Gendarmes Corps. The covered agents of these centers were taken from the legions with the least police problems and were detached for six months to the 2 experimental centers¹³.

On 5th of March, 1940, by order no. 38503 of the Command of the Gendarmerie, it was established, besides the 10th Gendarme Regiment from Suceava, starting on 1st of April, to operate an informative center as a collaboration and information body of the regiment, and the headquarters to be in some rooms of the regiment building. At the regimental commanders' conference it was decided that this information center would remain in the future in this regiment, with the information service and the State Security section of the old police station. The informative center was an integral part of the regiment and it was under its full authority. The commander of the regiment had the right of direct control over the center. Its staff consisted of 1 senior officer (center chief), 1 senior aid officer, 1 typewriter plutonist, 12 undercover agents and a driver. His command was lieutenant colonel Isopescu Modest, who was assisted by Major D. Dlujanschi (who served as chief of the Police Office), plutonary Sinițar Ioan (typist secretary) and the gendarme Ognărescu Traian (driver). Those that were chosen for informative activities¹⁴ were the sergeants Oprișan Andrei, Mazuru Ioan, Ionaș Gh. Vasilescu Aurel, Roșca Ioan, Beguș Ioan, Jardan Ioan, sergeant major Popovici Corneliu, Bombuleac Porfirie,

¹² *Ibidem*, f. 212.

¹³ *Ibidem*, f. 214.

¹⁴ Central National Historical Archives, *Gendarmes Regional Inspectorates* Fund, dos. 279, f. 1-2.

Conduraru Constantin, Rahlițchi Boris and the former agent Catărău Mihai, former agent of the Police Bureau. The agents of the former informative sector and the special office were changed and replaced with new agents. They did not know any foreign language, especially that in a corner of the country such as Suceava County, where there were a lot of minorities, it was difficult for them to adapt¹⁵. The infiltrating agent had to be changed in a very short time, because there was a risk that he would be removed, due to the lack of knowledge of the minority language, and because the minorities knew the people to connect. If the intelligence service has resisted in the past, this was the merit of the foreign language officers and the recruiting resident agents. This personnel had to be under close supervision, especially after the outbreak of World War II, the irredentist organizations as well as the German, Jewish and Ukrainian minorities¹⁶. The agent did not manage to specialize in the mission of a single problem and had to pursue, at the same time, other issues that required him to move to other counties. After the center was set up, the agents were assigned over problems. For each problem, teams consisting of an elder experienced agent and 1 or 2 new agents were formed. The new agents were, firstly, employed in short and precise missions, and were updated on the police situation on the ground. The agents of the informative center of the 10th Gendarme Regiment from Suceava had the following supervision:

The Communist Problem: Continuing with the surveillance started last month, a team of three agents investigated the South and West of Rădăuți County and identified many people who joined the communist movement by establishing links between them and with other centers in Câmpulung and Storojineț. Through the activity of the agents, it was possible to establish the expansion that took communist propaganda and that came from the city of Vijnîța. The knowledge of the organizations from the industrial regions of Câmpulung county made it possible to send a team in May to identify the main members of this current. Agents established links with other centers and identified the regions where communist propaganda had spread. The communists were asking the villagers “not to respond to incorporations, to concentrations, and to different possible mobilization operations”. But the communists were targeting the U.R.S.S., not Germany, and were pursuing “cross-border challenges in Russia, as well as urging that, in the event of a war with Russia, they would not fight the Soviet army. The instigators supported the propaganda, pointing out that Russia will reward all of them, and gave them allotment near the

¹⁵ *Ibidem*.

¹⁶ Ștefan Purici, *Aspects of the problem of national minorities in historical Bucovina between 1918-1940 (II)*, Bucharest, in the Annals of Bucovina, IV, 1997, p. 422.

Romanian border, on the territory of the former Poland, with about 5.40 hectares of land, in relation to the influence they had on us (in Romania – our note), and if Bucovina is occupied by the Russians, they will be given management positions.

The Ukrainian problem: the agents of this informative center were able to establish all the links that existed between the Ukrainian leading center in the Cernăuți town with Hotin, as well as the links between Cernăuți and Zastavna city, which recently took the leadership role for the North Shore instead of the Cozmeni city, where was the center of Ukrainian iridity until that moment. At the same time, the links that existed between the city of Văscăuți and Cernăuți, as well as the extent of the Ukrainian propaganda over the Carpathian mountains, were established near the municipality of Dihtineț Coniatin. As the Ukrainian propaganda became weaker towards the South, the Ukrainian rulers from Cernăuți appealed to officials and intellectuals from Câmpulung county, some of whom were moved from the North of the county because of their irredentist attitude. These officials came into contact with the Ukrainian population starting to amplify the Ukrainian national spirit in the mountainous regions, infiltrating the irredentist ideology. An informative activity was needed to identify the Ukrainian propagandists from Câmpulung County, who were beginning to set in motion the irredentist propaganda from the South of the land, pushing it north in the regions inhabited by a population that speaks a Ukrainian dialect, seeking to connect with the iridescent propaganda that was spreading from the Vijnîța city to the South. Those liaisons between the Ukrainian centers in Vijnîța, Văscăuți and the population from Storojineț and Rădăuți counties were identified¹⁷.

The German Movement: through the resident agents, instructions for the organization of the German youth were obtained from the German community. The rules of organization were a valuable object in terms of informative activity. Through the activity carried out by the covered agents, it was possible to ascertain the role of the people from the German Consulate in Cernăuți in guiding the German movement, who was launching the German newsletters, to whom they were sent, and how the public opinion was influenced by German propaganda. It was possible to establish and observe the effect that German propaganda had on the German colonists, and from the interception of some letters it was found that the connections between the Germans in Reich and some colonists in the country, were as close as possible.

¹⁷ Central National Historical Archives, *Gendarmes Regional Inspectorates* Fund, dos. 279, f. 4.

The Jewish Movement: By recruiting resident agents, one could know the newest problems that concerned the Jewish minority, namely the grouping that took place among the socialist movement, the propaganda for emigration and the influence exerted by the Jews on the state of mind of the rest of the population¹⁸. It has been possible to establish which Jewish societies were communist in character and which seek to approach the iridescent Ukrainian, to give them an orientation towards communism. Another aspect that was in the attention of the organs of the Information Center of the 10 Gendarme Regiment from Suceava was the Join Banking Society, a society with funds for Jewish cultural purposes, which offered to the Christian sectarians money that they did not have to return.

The Information Center of the 10th Gendarme Regiment from Suceava, through the covered agents in charge of obtaining data and information from various fields of activity, but also an informative monitoring on the foreigners arrived on the Romanian territory, information that was transmitted in a security framework and to the other law structures and public safety, the Romanian authorities made a contribution to ensuring and maintaining public order and safety.

References

Central National Historical Archives, *The General Inspectorate of the Gendarmerie* Fund.

Central National Historical Archives, *Gendarmes Regional Inspectorates* Fund.

Nuțu, Ilie, (2012), *The Gendarmerie 1918-1940*, Suceava, Teaching Staff Publishing House, p. 87.

Popa, Costică, (2010), *Gendarmes and Polish refugees (1939-1940)* in "Cultural Educational" Highlights, Romanian Gendarmerie, Bucharest, Publishing House of the Ministry of Administration and Interior, p. 2.

Purici, Ștefan, (1997), *Aspects of the problem of national minorities in historical Bucovina between 1918-1940* (II), Bucharest, in the Annals of Bukovina, vol. IV, p. 422.

Stan, Constantin I., Alexandru Gaiță, (2011), *Soviet actions of espionage in Romania (1940-1941)*, in the Yearbook of the National Archives Bacău Acta Bacoviensia no. VI, Onești, Magic Print Publishing House, p. 322.

Zaharia, Gheorghe, (1981), *Romania's national defense policy in the interwar European context (1919-1939)*, Bucharest, Military Publishing House, pp. 244-249.

¹⁸ *Ibidem*.

TOWARDS A NEW SENSE OF US IN THE THIRD MILLENNIUM, BETWEEN SOLIDARITY AND SOCIAL SUSTAINABILITY

Mihaela Gavrilă*,

mihaela.gavrila@uniroma1.it

Lidia Velici**

lidia.velici@genesis.ro

Utopias today appear to be far more achievable than previously thought. And we are currently faced with a much more agonizing question: how can we avoid their ultimate realization? (...) Utopias are achievable. Life marches towards utopias. And perhaps a new century begins; a century in which intellectuals and the educated class will think of the means of avoiding utopias and returning to a non-utopian society, less "perfect" and more free.

Nicolai Berdiaeff, epigraph to *Brave New World* by Aldous Huxley

Abstract: *This paper starts from the need to rediscover solidarity and social sustainability to return the identity at the subject and at its community. The opposite of liquidity is solidity; solidarity comes from this word, as if she were the antidote to the fragmented society of our times. It doesn't exist development of individuality if not from the recognition of what we have in common. If we were fully integrated, it would not be personal identity, but even if we were totally isolated there would not be too personal identity, because the identity is the munus (the gift) of communities. This would mean recognize he self-implicated in the other, and from this original debt can design their difference. So, there is a need, more than ever, identity, as there is need to the future. A future trapped in the roles and social conventions, which often act as a cage rather than from "optimizer" of relationships and energies.*

Keywords: *solidarity, social sustainability, identity, future*

* Sapienza University of Rome.

** PhD., University of Bucharest, Faculty of Psychology and Educational Sciences.

This article focuses on investigating some emergencies of the present, which express the need for a new way of being together, based on solidarity and social sustainability as a source of identity for the subject and the communities to which they belong.

For a long time, as sociologists or people immersed in social reality, we have accepted and cultivated Bauman's luck metaphor on the "liquefaction" of society, relationships, individual life, forms of consumption, etc., uncritically. However, while this concept brought so much success to its author, its internalization in terms of social practices and daily life was not so happy. The ruthless description of the movable or "liquid" characters of our society ends up generating an acknowledgment of a situation that traps people within labels and lifestyles that see the progressive loss of some of the conquests of modernity: individual freedom, free time, empowerment. And so, from subjects more or less strong, more or less secure and free, we are becoming, in our "liquidation" as individuals, collective, national identities, increasingly insecure, less and less strong, increasingly caged in so-called liquid social structures because small and unstable, uncertain, highly specialized and with little vision of the whole, without an awareness of the past and real sense of the present and, therefore, without a possibility of projection into the future¹⁹. For example, we take into consideration the time resource, apparently outside of us, actually strongly conditioned socially and individually: the race of life, the need to migrate between multiple jobs, the concentration always "in defense" on the sphere of work and on the material sphere implies a progressive removal from the sphere of affections, emotions, and the expansion of social and cultural capital. As if the world was suddenly invaded by thousands of "gray gentlemen" (Ende, 1973), who "steal" *leisure time*, diverting thought from beautiful things, from life, from relationships, in favor of less rewarding competition with oneself and others. This is what for Morin is an unconscious suffering typical of the western and westernized world, the result of two cognitive deficiencies:

"the blindness of a way of knowledge that, by compartmentalising knowledge, disintegrates fundamental and global problems, which require

¹⁹ Several scholars have dedicated part of their contributions to the "culture of the present" and to the era of contingency. We cite, among all, Marc Augé, who attributes the deprivation of the future to the financial crisis, with a present "... becoming hegemonic. In the eyes of ordinary mortals, it is no longer the fruit of the slow maturation of the past, it no longer reveals the features of possible futures, but imposes itself as an accomplished fact, whose sudden rise makes the past disappear and saturates the imagination of the future" (Augé M. (2008), *Nonluoghi. Introduzione a una antropologia della surmodernità*, Elèuthera, Milano, p. 27). Among the Italian scholars, we remember, among others, the point of view of Valeria Giordano (2001), Donatella Pacelli (2009) and Carlo Mongardini (1993 e 2009).

transdisciplinary knowledge; occidental-centrism puts us on the throne of rationality and gives us the illusion of possessing the universal. Therefore, what blinds us, is not only our ignorance, it is also our conscience" (Morin, 2011, p. 5).

These are some of the reasons why, in times dominated by the restlessness of crisis and profound loneliness, reflecting around the new sense of being together seemed at the same time a paradoxical and useful ethical stimulus, as well as intellectual. In fact, it is a reflection that needed a different centrality already from the moment in which the individualistic emergence loomed and, therefore, long before attending real "individualistic mutations"²⁰.

A simplifying starting point is precisely the recovery of the etymological meaning of the "together": united, in the company of ..., the opposite of solitude and individualism.

But let's see where, in the characteristics of contemporary society, shall we place the new sense of being together. A first semantic map, from Aristotle, reminds us that man is a social animal, which needs to be accepted in / by the community. The sense of being together, therefore, is found in the same need for social integration²¹:

a) founded on the diffusion of common rules, derived from internalized value models (culture and society)

b) based on the innate disposition to conform to the beliefs, ideologies, behaviors, actions of others (reference groups, power elites)

c) founded on rational consensus, on the calculation of utility and around some requirements of peaceful coexistence

d) founded on regulatory norms imposed from the outside, from a power, moral norm, (see Rousseau but also Durkheim, 1893, with mechanical solidarity)

e) based on interdependent processes (Durkheim, organic solidarity, but also functionalism and cybernetics)

f) founded on the exchange: economic, of goods and services among *homines oeconomici*; individualistic, including in the objects of exchange the signs of affection, feelings, recognitions, messages, all the significant acts of exchange between *ego* and *alter*²²; collectivist (Lévi Strauss), where the objects exchanged are scarce resources, economic but also human

²⁰ Cfr. Gozzini, G., (2011), *La mutazione individualista. Gli italiani e la televisione 1954-2011*, Bari, Laterza.

²¹ Cfr. Gallino, L., (2004), *Dizionario di Sociologia* (II ed.), Torino, Utet, pp. 378 - 381 and Gallino, L., (2011), *Finanzcapitalismo. La civiltà del denaro in crisi*, Torino, Einaudi.

²² Homans, G., (1961), *Social behavior*, Harcourt, New York, Brace&World; Blau, P.M., (1964), *Exchange and Power in Social Life*, New York, John Wiley and Sons, Inc.

(women of marriage age), a society that "states" a structure of communicative relationships where its members are not conscious²³.

But integration means, above all, the opposite of marginality; it is a complex interactive alchemy and negotiation of meanings, which allows an individual to be accepted by a group he likes, under conditions that vary according to the degree to which he feels real and perceived attraction of the group and of the utility that the community attributes to his insertion.

Integration, however, is only the basis of being together, it is a continuous game of mirrors, of identity, identification and recognition that makes exclusion or inclusion become the foundation of the quality of life within society²⁴. In the contemporaneous society, integration is systematically eroded and questioned by individualization, a dimension of meaning that has less clear rules and that appears as the cultural outcome of the process of estrangement that is also nourished in and with the media.

"Individualization is, at the same time, the cause and effect of autonomies, freedoms and personal responsibilities, but the flip side of the coin is the degradation of ancient solidarity, the atomization of people, self-centeredness and, basically, what could be called ***the metastasis of the Ego***"²⁵.

Together means, finally, collaboration and not competition to face crisis situations: in the TV market, for example, for the first time, in the last few years US and UK commercial and public networks agreed on the distribution of content on line²⁶.

On the other hand, life together implies identification, ***seeing oneself as the other***²⁷, implies the cultivation of the sense of encounter, of respect, of sharing between cultures. The meeting between those who isolate themselves in their subjective fragility, typical of the new precarious western world and the unarmed protagonists of the desire to be like the others, among others, like the neighbors of the Maghreb who have triggered on these bases, real cultural and communicative revolutions.

And yet, the new meaning of life together is given by the progressive replacement of the rigid and hierarchical "structures" in favor of the networks - not necessarily the technological ones but those that favor the

²³ Ekeh, P., (1974), *Social Exchange Theory - The Two Traditions*, London, p. II, cap. IV.

²⁴ Santoro, M., (2005), "Esclusi e inclusi", in Giglioli, P.P., *Invito allo studio della società*, Il Mulino, Bologna, pp. 37-56.

²⁵ Morin, E., (2005), *Il Metodo. 6. Etica*, Raffaello Cortina, Milano, p. 43.

²⁶ See the case of online content distribution platform Hulu, in the USA and YouView (initially Canvas) in England (Gavrila 2010, AGCOM, 2011).

²⁷ Ricoeur P., (1990), *Soi-même comme un autre*, Seuil, Paris, (trad. it. 1993) *Sé come un altro*, Milano, Jaca Book.

finding and that restore the sense of security - networks between people, between people and institutions, between public and private, between elderly, adults and young people.

Finally, the new sense of being together is read above all between the lines of a model of society based on the quality of life and relationships between people.

Hence, even the return to the past is required, not from a technological point of view or from the evolution of the human genius - which would be impossible, as well as wrong - but through the systematic recovery of tradition and common goods, even passing from a reflection on the metamorphosis of words. Take, for example, one of the most widespread concepts to talk about exchanges in our society: "**between-them**". Contrary to what it may seem at first sight, the original sense is not negative, and does not necessarily refer to the linguistic arsenal of individualism but means "to be in between". It is emblematic how this concept has been transformed semantically to define not something that is common between *Ego* and *Alter*, but something that is neither of one nor the other (in Latin *neuter*) and that therefore in fact holds people together to condition to keep them away and vice versa: after all, globalizing capitalism makes everyone simultaneously interdependent and all alone fighting against others²⁸.

"The traditional model of development **ignores the solidarity**, knowledge and skills of local societies, so we must rethink and diversify the idea of development so that it preserves the solidarity inherent in community realities"²⁹.

Let us return, therefore, to the beginning of our reflection, which proposed itself as a criticism of social liquidity. The opposite **of liquidity** is **solidity**, a word from which **solidarity** comes, as if it were the antidote to the disintegrated society of our times. There is no development of individuality except by recognizing what we have in common. If we were totally integrated there would be no personal identity, and the same situation would occur if we were totally isolated: because identity is the *munus* (the gift) of the *communitas*, that is, to recognize oneself involved in others, and starting from this original debt to elaborate the own difference. A difference that makes the difference (as it generates identity) but is not different (it does not make us deaf & mute to the other).

There is a need, more than ever of identity, as the need for the future. A future caged in social roles and conventions, which often function as a

²⁸ Gallino, L., *Finanzcapitalismo. La civiltà del denaro in crisi*, Torino, Einaudi, 2011.

²⁹ Hessel, S., Morin, E., *Il cammino della speranza*, Milano, Chiarelettere, 2012, p. 25.

prison rather than as devices to "optimize" and enable relationships and energy. In fact, Sennett is right when he argues, in his recent *Insieme. Rituali, piaceri, politiche della collaborazione*, (Together. Rituals, pleasures, policies of collaboration), that "people's collaboration capacities are far greater and more complex than society allows to express"³⁰.

In order to conclude this brief analysis - therefore, at high risk of fragmentation - let us try to identify one of the many areas of application on what has been shared until now. A starting point for verifying the possibility of a new sense of being together at the time of the crisis probably passes through the recovery of the relationship between the generations and, in particular, the investment in the youth universe as a space of solidarity. An interesting lesson in recovering the sense of solidity of bonds as solidarity can pass through the rethinking of intergenerational relations, worn out by the crises of the modern world. Young people are more than ever in need of bonds, of memory, because they need roots and the recovery of that authenticity that finds in the relations with previous generations a renewable source of future. It is also for this reason that, in defining an overall paradigm that manages to embrace the industriousness of this period, it is essential to unify all those energies that can contribute to the development of more advanced policies and, in fact, to the construction of a cultural debate and operational strategies that can promote with greater incisiveness the quality of the intergenerational exchange, even of that destined to pass through the media and cultural and communicative practices. It is not by chance that, upset by identity, economic, family and work crises, young people invest in *places* dedicated to the recomposition, sharing and aggregation, exploiting the media also for their great value as depositaries of organized forms of individual and collective memory. However, this tendency to entrust the construction of bonds to the aggregating force of communication has not always guaranteed the promised results. Indeed, lately we are increasingly aware that what could have been a way of identity and community building has often turned out to be a "surrogate" of sociality and a source of exclusion and social marginalization.

"It must be said, in this regard, that the relationship between economic crisis and communication is part of a more general theme, namely the relationship between social crisis and communication. There is a feeling that communication, its exploit, its contradictions and its nature (and therefore the tendencies with which the subjects tend to emancipate themselves through communication), has among the most significant elements to consider in a reflection on the dimensions of the social crisis.

³⁰ Sennett, R., *Insieme. Rituali, piaceri, politiche della collaborazione*, Feltrinelli, Milano, 2012, p. 41.

In this perspective, studying the media helps to study society and can reduce distances with respect to the perception of pain, difficulties and crises of the human beings. But if these are the *desired*, it cannot be ignored that communication has been and is a very different reality, more often a factor of disintegration than of the recomposition of social ties."³¹

But revolution is not the way out towards the cultivation of a new sense of being together, growing up and growing social cultures alongside the crops of the earth. We must start - or perhaps we are already in - a delicate and decisive transition, like an adolescence of relationships, that accompanies us towards a maturation of the new sense of us, through a long rite of passage from childhood to age of obligations and awards.

Re-educating ourselves in an intercultural and inter-generational cohabitation could help us to get out of the excesses of excessive individualism and to develop a culture of acceptance, dialogue, communication, in a society in need of new symbolic foundations, which can find expression also but not only with the media.

References

- Bauman, Z., (2006), *Modernità liquida*, Bari, Laterza.
- Bauman, Z., (2010), *L'etica in un mondo di consumatori*, Roma-Bari, Laterza.
- Bauman, Z., (2002), *Voglia di comunità*, Roma-Bari, Laterza.
- Blau, P.M., (1960), "A Theory of Social Integration", in *American Journal of Sociology*, LXV (6).
- Blau, P.M., (1964), *Exchange and Power in Social Life*, New York, John Wiley and Sons, Inc.
- Donati, P., (2007), (a cura di), *Il capitale sociale. L'approccio relazionale*, Milano, Franco Angeli.
- Ekeh, P., (1974), *Social Exchange Theory - The Two Traditions*, London, p. II, cap. IV.
- Ende, M., (1973 - ed. it. 1984), *Momo*, Torino, Longanesi.
- Giddens, A., (1990), *The Consequences of Modernity*, Cambridge, Polity Press (trad. it. *Le conseguenze della modernità. Fiducia e rischio, sicurezza e pericolo*, Bologna, il Mulino, 1994).
- Gozzini, G., (2011), *La mutazione individualista. Gli italiani e la televisione 1954-2011*, Bari, Laterza.
- Gallino, L., (2004), *Dizionario di Sociologia (seconda edizione)*, Torino, Utet.

³¹ Morcellini, M., "Cultura. La Sociologia della Comunicazione alla luce del nodo cultura/media" in Borrelli, D., Gavrilu, M., *Media che cambiano. Parole che restano*, Milano, Franco Angeli, 2013, p. 16.

Gallino, L., (2011), *Finanzcapitalismo. La civiltà del denaro in crisi*, Torino, Einaudi.

Gavrila, M., (2010), *La crisi della tv. La tv della crisi. Televisione e Public Service nell'eterna transizione italiana*, Milano, Franco Angeli.

Giddens, A., (2000), *Il mondo che cambia. Come la globalizzazione ridisegna la nostra vita*, Bologna, Il Mulino.

Giordano, V., (2001), *Soggetti senza tempo. Una riflessione sociologica sullo spazio recluso*, Roma, SEAM.

Hessel, S., Morin, E., (2011), *Le chemin de l'esperance*, Fayard, Paris; (trad. it. 2012), *Il cammino della speranza*, Milano, Chiarelettere ed..

Homans, G., (1961), *Social behavior*, Harcourt, New York, Brace&World.

Mongardini, C., (1993), *La cultura del presente. Tempo e storia sulla tarda modernità*, Milano, Franco Angeli.

Morcellini, M., (2013), "Cultura. La Sociologia della Comunicazione alla luce del nodo cultura/media" in Borrelli, D., Gavrila, M., *Media che cambiano. Parole che restano*, Milano, Franco Angeli.

Morin, E., (2005), *Il Metodo. 6. Etica*, Raffaello Cortina, Milano.

Morin, E., (2011), *La via. Per l'avvenire dell'umanità*, Milano, Raffaello Cortina.

Ostrom, E., (2006), *Governare i beni collettivi. Istituzioni pubbliche e iniziative delle comunità*, Venezia, Marsilio.

Pacelli, D., (2009), "Contingenza versus cultura della contingenza. Un altro paradosso della modernità" in *L'epoca della contingenza tra vita quotidiana e scenari globali* (ed. C. Mongardini), Milano, FrancoAngeli.

Ricoeur P., (1990), *Soi-même comme un autre*, Seuil, Paris, (trad. it. 1993) *Sé come un altro*, Milano, Jaca Book.

Santoro, M., (2005), "Esclusi e inclusi", in Giglioli, P.P., *Invito allo studio della società*, Il Mulino, Bologna.

Sennett, R., (2012), *Insieme. Rituali, piaceri, politiche della collaborazione*, Feltrinelli, Milano.

THE DIFFERENTIAL IMPACT OF CONTEMPORARY GLOBALISATION POLICIES ON WOMEN IN RURAL COMMUNITIES OF DELTA, KANO AND KWARA STATES, NIGERIA

Harriet Efanodor-Obeten Omokiniovo*

efanodor.harriet@edouniversity.edu.ng

Abstract: *The study examined the impact of contemporary globalisation policies of liberalisation, privatisation and deregulation on women in rural communities of Delta, Kano and Kwara states, Nigeria. The general opinion of proponents of globalisation policies is that they were meant to bring about rapid development. In the light of this generic assumption, development paradigm which emphasize neo-liberal policy framework of global development was adopted and implemented by the Nigerian government without a local input. The qualitative analysis of the study was based on the perceptions of women from three study states where significant implementation has taken place. The findings of the study dispute the theoretical assumption as it noted the sweeping generalisation of global development. Though the findings revealed mixed impact, that is positive and negative, the negative impacts seem to be overwhelming. The uneven impact of globalisation policies on women in rural communities is mediated by religious practice and socio-cultural norms prevalent in their respective communities. Hence, the extent to which women in rural communities could benefit from the changes in the rural economy varies in accordance to their access to productive resources, opportunities and skills. The study recommends amongst others, that effort should be made to incorporate socio-economic and gender analysis into policies and programmes.*

Keywords: *Globalisation policies, Women, Rural communities; Liberalisation; Deregulation; Privatisation.*

Introduction

Policies aimed at globalisation are imbedded in the neo-liberal economic development strategy expressed in liberalisation, deregulation and privatisation. Changes in the world economy as a result of the processes of globalisation are expected to have an impact on the rural economy because the processes of globalisation interact with other processes at different levels including domestic economic policies,

* Department of Political Science and Public Administration, Edo University Iyamho, Edo State Nigeria.

livelihood strategies as well as socio-economic strategies¹. Globalisation policies are gender neutral policies. However, given gender role in societies, gender neutral policies will affect women and men differently. Therefore, women in rural areas will be affected differently by policies that affect the rural economy.

Unfortunately, policies and programmes designed and implemented by the World Bank, International Monetary Fund (IMF), World Trade Organisation (WTO) and Nigerian government have tended to ignore the differential impact these policies and programmes will have on women especially those in rural communities. Thus the formulation of economic reform policies and implementation in Nigeria was gender blind in the sense that the knowledge of how women's lives are structured by socio-economic and political conditions in which they live was largely ignored. Similarly, many of the indicators showing how countries are affected by current economic trends are in and of themselves not gender sensitive. There is the absence of sex-disaggregated indicators and data in key sectors such as agricultural production and the informal sector. The above gap especially for rural women has been serious consequences for the development of women friendly national and global economic, social policies, and in transforming the forces of economic globalization to be beneficial to rural women.

Nigeria is largely made up of rural communities which constitute most of its population. Rural women participate in development processes in diverse ways, and they constitute a high percentage of Nigeria's rural population where they provide 60-70% of the nation's rural labour force². Aspects of globalisation policies that relates to the rural economy includes the commercialisation of agriculture and expansion of labour, the liberalisation of international trade and markets for agricultural product, the intensification of international and internal labour migration, increasing privatisation of resources such as land and services and structural adjustment policies³. In Nigerian society, gender relationship are socially determined hence there are socially delegated tasks, obligations, activities and privileges that are specified or reserved either

¹ Etemike, L and Efanodor, H.O., Contemporary globalization and the Rural Economy in Nigeria. *American International Journal of Social Sciences* 4(3):14-27. 2015

² Gender in Nigeria Report, *Improving the Lives of Girls and Women in Nigeria: Issues, Policies and Action*. UKAID, British Council Nigeria, 2012; Efanodor, H.O Developmental Strategies and Cultural Dynamics in Rural Nigeria. In Falola and Kalu (eds) *Africa and Globalisation: Challenges of Governance and Creativity*. Cham, Palgrave Macmillan 2018, p. 144.

³ See United Nations, Improving the situation of women in Rural areas. Retrieved from www.om.int/jahia/webdav/shared/mainside/policy-andsearch/un/60/a/pdf; Etemike and Efanodor 2015, p. 15 Ibid.

for males or females or for both⁴. Patriarchy is largely reflected in household structure, gender relations and access to productive resources. Women bear enormous burden because of poverty, lack of access to productive resources and some cultural practices that impose formidable constraints on their effective participation in the economy and rural development⁵. Therefore the changes in rural economy occasioned by globalisation policies will have gender implications.

How these changes affect women in rural communities depend in the first instance on two proximate factors: what role women in rural communities play in the rural economy and how equipped they are to take advantage of the expanding activities. These two factors depend in turn on a large number of underlying forces operating at the individual, household, community, state, national and global level. For instance, individual skills and access to resources would have a bearing on the extent to which women in rural communities can participate in declining as well as expanding activities in the rural sector. Household structure and the nature of intra-household division of labour will also affect women in rural communities' opportunities and their ability to undertake them. Furthermore, their ability to seize the new opportunities and to fend off the new threats will also depend upon social norms impinging on gender division of labour in the broader economy, and the extent to which women in rural communities can play an effective role in decision making process at the household, community, national as well as international levels⁶.

Hence to understand the situation of women in rural communities, it is necessary to examine fully the diversity of their experiences in the context of the changing rural economy, including their position within household and community structures; the gender divisions of labour; their access to and control over resources. Contemporary Nigeria and its Fourth Republic afford us the opportunity to examine theoretically and empirically the nature and the influence exerted by globalisation policies on women in rural communities within the context of the changing rural economy. Consequently, the study is topical in the present context of a need for an informed strategy that should be adopted by Nigeria in its survival effort. Findings based on local evidence will also draw out more nuanced and specific insights on the diverse plights, lived realities and coping strategies of rural women in the target communities/regions in Nigeria; and hopefully, provide an alternative understanding that would inform policy. Consequently the objective of the paper is to present empirical evidence from case by case study of how globalisation policies

⁴ Hassan, R.H., *Nigerian Womanhood. Kadunna, Nigeria: Jel Publications 1992.*

⁵ Efanodor, 2018, p. 144, Ibid

⁶ United Nations, 2005, Ibid

affect the socio-economic activities of women in rural communities in Delta, Kano and Kwara state, Nigeria while highlighting its differential impact.

Globalisation and woman: review of literature

The phenomenon of globalisation has, over the years, generated a vast amount of literature wherein which certain questions have been debated at length. Proponent of neoliberal economic policy posit that there is a body of empirical evidence supporting the assertion that economic globalisation opens avenues in which women can enhance their status⁷ demonstrated in their works how female gender have experienced a significant increase in employment through Multinational Corporation (MNC) investment. Proponent of globalisation also⁸, observed how the growth of export manufacturing due to globalisation has led to poverty reduction for women.

Critics of globalisation⁹ asserts that the implementation of the neoliberal market ideology make states less capable or willing to carry out traditional societal tasks such as providing social assistance and women are generally among those in greatest need of social assistance program.

⁷ See for example, some studies, including Poe, S.C., Wendel-Blunt, and Ho, K. Global Patterns in the Achievement of Women's Human Rights to Equality. In *Human Right Quarterly*. 19(14): 813-835 1997; Acker, J. (Gender Capitalism and Globalization. In *Critical Sociology*. 30(1). 24-46 2004.; Deo, N. Is Globalization Our Friend? Women's Aillies in the Developing World. In *Current History*. 105(681) 105-111 2006; Gray, M. Kittison, M.C. and Sandhitz Women and Globalisation: A study of 180 Nation 1975-2000. *International Organisation*. 60(2); 297-303 2006; United Nations *World Survey on the Role of Women in Development: Globalization, Gender and Work*. UN: Department of Economic and Social Affairs 1999; Giridharadas, An *International Business: India, known for Outsourcing, Expand in Industry*. New York Times. May 142006; Kabeer, N. and Mahmud S. Globalization, Gender and Poverty: Bangladeshi Women Workers in Export and Local Market. In *Journal of International Development* 2004. 16(1): 93-109; Williams, M. *Some Preliminary Remark on Gender Analysis of Trade and Investment Issues in the Context of Mobilising International Resources for Development Financing*. New York: United Nations 2000; Drezner, D. Globalisation Without Riot. New York Times. April 18. 2004; United Nations Development Program *Human Development Report*. New York: United Nations 1999; Bhagwati, J. In *Defence of Globalization*. (Oxford: Oxford University Press) 2004.

⁸ See studies like Kabeer and Mahmud 2004 Ibid; Osmani, S.R., *The Impact of Globalization on Poverty in Bangladesh*, Working Paper No 65, Policy Integration Department, National Policy Group. International Labour Office, (Geneva: International Labour Organization) 2005.

⁹ Such as Bergeron, S., Political Economy Discourse of Globalization and Feminist Politics. In *Signs*. 20(4): 983-106 2001; Rao, A. and Kelletter, D., Is There Life After Gender Mainstreaming? In *Gender and Development*. 13(2): 57-69, 2005. Retrieved from www.genderanddevelopment.org/gender-budget-cagatay.pdf. on 05/04/2012.

Other Critics of globalisation¹⁰ reject the claim that MNC investment provides economic benefits to women. Przeworski and Vreeland¹¹; Vreeland¹²; Richards¹³; Canagarajah and Bhattamishra¹⁴, in their various studies on globalisation and women points to Latin America, the Middle East, and Africa, where little benefit to women has been shown from market liberalization policies. Furthermore, the argument that illuminates from several feminist critique¹⁵ from their studies is that the globalisation

¹⁰ Such as Blackden, G. M. and Ganagarajah, R.S., Gender and Growth in Africa: Evidence and Issues. Paper Prepared for the United Nations Economic Commission for Africa Expert Meeting on Pro-Growth. Kampala, Uganda 2003; Cacatay, N. Gender Budgets and Beyond: Feminist Fiscal Policy in the Context of Globalization. In *Gender and Development*. 11(1): 15-24 2003. Retrieved from

www.genderanddevelopment.org/gender-budget-cagatay.pdf. on 05/04/2012.; Pearson, R. Feminist Responses to Economic Globalization. In *Gender and Development*. 11(1): 25-34, 2003. Retrieved from www.genderanddevelopment.org/gender-budget-cagatay.pdf. on 05/04/2012; Ritter, A. and Pollock, D., (2001), Look South for Example of the Benefits of Open Trade. In *The Ottawa Citizen*; Sequin, S.(2000) Gender, Inequality and Economic Growth: A Cross-Country Analysis. In *World Development*. 28(7): 1211-1230.; Sethuraman, S.U. (1998) *Gender, Informality and Poverty: A Global Review*. Report for the World Bank Poverty Reduction and Economic Management Department. Washington, D. C: World Bank.; Dugger, C.W. (2004) Supermarket Giants Crush Central American Firms. New York: Times December 28; Rodrik, D (1997) *Has Globalization Gone too far?* Washing D.C.: Institute for International Economics.; Chen, M.A. and Carr, M. (2002) *Globalization and the Informal Economy: How Global Trade and Investment Impact on the Working Poor*. Working Paper on the Informal Economy. No 1. Geneva: International Labour Organization.; Standing, G., (1999), Global Feminization Through Flexible Labour: A Theme Revisited. In *World Development*. 27(3): 583-602.; Meyer, H. (1998) *Human Rights and International Political Economy in Third World Nations*. Westport: Praeger Publishing.; Women's Environmental and Development Organization (1998) *Mapping Progress: Assessing Implementation of the Beijing Platform*. New York: Women's Environmental and Development Organization.

¹¹ Przeworski, A. and Vreeland, J., (2000), The Effect of IMF Programs on Economic Growth. In *Journal of Development Economics*. 62(2): 385-421.

¹² Vreeland, J., (2003), *The IMF and Economic Development*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

¹³ Richards, D.L., (2007), Women's Status and Economic Globalization. In *International Studies Quarterly*. 51:855-876. Retrieved from

<http://www.128.226.23//dirnew/pubs.isq/women.status.richard.pdf> on 29/05/12.

¹⁴ Canagarajah, S. and Bhattamishra, R., (2001), Non-Farm Income, Gender and Inequality: Evidence from the Rural Ghana and Uganda. In *Food Policy*. 26(4): 405-420.

¹⁵ Dex, S., (1985), The Sexual Division of Work. In *Harvester* 6(1); Sanderson, K and Crompton, K., (1990), *Gendered Jobs and Social Change*. London: Unwin Hyman; Sarkar, S. and (2009), Globalization and Women at Work: A Feminist Discourse. A paper Presented at the International Feminist Summit, Townville Australia. Retrieved from www.feministagenda.org.au/fs%20paper/sumita.2.pdf on 29/5/12.; Walby, S., (1990), *Theorizing Patriarchy*. Oxford: Blackwell Publishers.; Sharma and Sengupta (1996). Gender Exploitation in Global Economy. In Llebsur, R., (ed) *Social Interaction for Justice*. Mumbai: Tala Institute of Social Sciences publications.; Jain, D., (2000),

process is not necessarily integrating women into homogenous entities in the sphere of economy, culture, technology and governance.

However, bulks of the reviewed work have been broadly concerned with the impact of globalisation on specific gender groups in various countries and regions. Emphasis had been on increasing role of migrant domestic worker¹⁶, women's resistance to globalization¹⁷, women's role as low-cost assembly and multinational plant workers. These activities are common for women in Asian, Latin America and Caribbean societies and largely absent from the experience of African women. African rural women hold position as subsistence farmers, agricultural workers, and participant in the informal and micro-enterprise sector. Therefore, globalization is bound to affect them in different form.

It is trite to note that land and natural resources remain critical to the rural economies and livelihood in Africa. Large scale acquisitions of land by foreign and domestic investors in developing countries are currently a subject of heated debate among researcher. Efanodor¹⁸; Clark and Efanodor¹⁹; Etemike and Efanodor²⁰ studies focused on the collection of local evidence and the documentation of empirical women experiences of local situation which emanate from the implementation of globalisation policies in Nigeria. However, what has been lacking in existing literature is in two fold. First, literature on Nigeria is silent about the differential impact policies of globalisation will have on women in rural areas.

Feminization and Globalization. A Synopsis Series: NCRW, Cuny and Japan Preparatory Committee Economic Dimension of Globalization Panel.

¹⁶ Purkayastha, B. and Mayumbar, S., Neo-Liberalism and Sex Trafficking in South Asia. In Lindio-Mc Goven and Wallimann (ed) *Globalization and Third World Women: Exploitation, Coping and Resistance*. United Kingdom: Ashgate Press, 2009.

¹⁷ McGovern-Lindo, L., (1997), *Filipino Peasant Women: Exploitation and Resistance*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press; McGovern-Lindo, L. (2007) Neo-Liberal Globalisation in the Philippine: its Impact on Filippno Women and their Forms of Resistance. In *Journal of Developing Societies* 23(1-2); 15-35.; McGovern-Lindo, L and Wailimann, I., (2009), Neo-Liberal Globalisation and Third World Women: Exploitation, Coping and Resistance. In Lindio-Mc Goven and Wallimann (ed) *Globalization and Third World Women: Exploitation, Coping and Resistance*. United Kingdom: Ashgate Press.

¹⁸ Efanodor O.H., Liberalisation of Oil Exploration: Land Grab and the Travails of Women in Rural Communities of Delta State. In Ewhrudjakpor, Atubi and Etemike (eds) *Oil Theft, Environmental Degradation and the Reciprocal Responsibilities of Host Communities and the Government in Nigeria*. 2015; Efanodor O. H., Large Scale Land Deals and Women in Rural Communities in Nigeria: Paradox of a Developmental Paradigm. *Research and Social Change* (2016); Efanodor, 2018, *op.cit*.

¹⁹ Clark and Efanodor, Land Grab as Developmental Strategy: Privatisation of Land and Women in Rural Communities of Kwara State, Nigeria. *Journal of Social and Management Sciences* 10(1) 2015.

²⁰ Etemike and Efanodor, 2015, cited works.

Secondly, given that neither rural women nor the different regions they live in Nigeria are not homogeneous, literature have not probed deeper to understand the differential impacts globalisation policies will have even within the same country or region, and how women in different parts of the country are responding to them. The study therefore presented theoretical and empirical evidence and documentation that filled the void in existing literature as regard the differential impact of contemporary globalisation policies on women in rural communities in Nigeria.

Research Methodology

The study was carried out through a descriptive qualitative survey. The descriptive survey was chosen due to the nature of the subject matter and the need to gain insights into the perspectives of both rural women and local leaders. The population of study was drawn from women living in rural areas. A stratified and purposeful sampling method was used to select 27 communities from the three study states in Nigeria which are Delta, Kwara and Kano. The three states were selected due to their particular economic profiles and major work related trend in the area, which are predicated to be significantly impacted by the ongoing globalisation process. The three states were stratified along the three senatorial districts. In each state three communities was purposively selected from each of the senatorial districts while the sample size was 200. The snowball purposive sampling technique was used to select the research subjects. A total of 9 Focus Group Discussion was held, one at each senatorial district. The data collected for the study is both qualitative and quantitative data. The qualitative data was collected directly from the affected population through two survey methods comprising of in-depth personal interview and Focus Group Discussion.

Descriptive analysis method was used to analyse data gotten for the study. Interviews conducted in local languages were transcribed to English language by a trained resource persons who can speak and write the local languages All scheduled recorded on audio recorder were also transcribed and analysed, inferences and conclusion was drawn from the case by case analysis of the primary data.

Globalisation Policies and Women in Rural Communities in Nigeria: Opportunities and Challenges

Changes in the rural economy are taking place within the context of implementing policies of globalisation which is based on the predominant neo-liberal policy orientation of global financial and trade institutions. In the Nigeria context efforts at implementing policies of globalisation through the promotion of Foreign Direct Investment since 1999 has

resulted in massive large-scale farming, large scale disposition of land and resources, expansion of oil extraction and exploration activities, establishment of EPZ, SPZ and agro business and industries in rural areas. The following were the context of globalization policies as it relates to the rural sector under which the study analysed the situation of women in rural communities; Privatization of resources such as land, commercialization of agriculture, Transition to liberalised market economy and global market, Shift to high value food and cash crops Development of value chain for export promotion, Expansion of agribusiness industries, Rapid change in agricultural technologies, Wider use of information and communication technologies and Structural adjustment policy involving cuts in public spending. The change brought about by these policies as it relate to the rural economy affect women in rural communities in two ways; first in the role that play in the rural economy and in turn their social relations.

Empirical analysis identified major change in the rural economy which presented both positive and negative impact for women. The changes in economic activities and its impact on women social relations were discussed under the following thematic headings that arose from field report.

- (i) Increasing diversification of sources livelihood
- (ii) Changing pattern of labour mobility
- (iii) Changing social structure in rural areas

Globalisation policies and increasing diversification of livelihood activities

The changes in the rural economy occasioned by the implementation of globalisation policies have led to intensive diversification of livelihood among women in rural communities of Nigeria. Local evidence from rural women shows that agricultural sector still remain the major employers of women in rural communities of Nigeria. However, with increased privatisation, liberalisation and market integration, most women opined that they are finding it difficult to depend and support their household with land based activities alone. As such the strategies adopted by these women were to turn to other source of livelihood, field work revealed two major source of livelihood diversification. These are; diversification into high value agricultural export and nonfarm based economic activities.

High value agricultural exports provided two main means for women in rural communities' livelihood diversification. These avenues are participating in wage labour employment on commercial farms as well as other people farm and wage labour as contract farmers to agri business or agro firms. The above is common for women in Kwara and Delta state and

less for women in Kano state as liberalisation of trade has reduced their wage labour as contractual farmers to textile industries. For instance women in Kwara and Delta state engage in wage labour through sub contract to agric business men, agro industries and commercial farmers on hired, family or land owned by them to produce high value crops needed by them. Such arrangement in agricultural export according to the women is labour intensive and has low income return. However, in terms of improvement over their traditional agricultural activities, rural women posit that the net return from sub-contracting is higher than their traditional agricultural activities. The growing spread of agro-industries as part of rural industrialisation has also provided source of diversification for women in rural communities. Through these opportunities women in rural communities can gain access to cash income.

In the area of diversification to nonfarm activities Focus Group Discussion revealed that most women in rural communities ventured into non farming activities such as operating small store, intra community trading amongst others, as nonfarm activities enables them to create the possibility of saving and supporting their household income. Evidence from the field point to the fact that even within the context of diversification of livelihood, most women in rural communities still depend on land and natural resources for their basic subsistence. Focus Group Discussion revealed that despite significant increase in the possibilities for diversification of livelihood such as improved access to cash income and other source of livelihood activities, the positive effect brought about by changes in the rural economy are circumscribed by other factor. According to the respondents the strategies they adopted to diversify their sources of livelihood depend on other factors such as capital, access to land and productive resources, education and skills. For instance, rural women in Kwara and Delta state posit that some of their non-farm activities depend on access to natural resource base which the current land grab of land and forest in the services of Foreign Direct services has led to intensive production and harvesting of forest for global market thereby leading to degradation of critical natural resources which women depend on as alternative source of income or as a source to supplement their income.

Secondly, the respondents noted that the right to control over land are important factor to access other factors such as credit facilities. According to them customary right to land and natural resources will enable them to benefit from agricultural production. However, the present privatisation process has intensified the continued deprivation of equal rights to land by the law as privatisation tend to lead to the concentration of land rights into the hands of male household head. Under diversification into non-farm

activities such as operating petty trade and food vendor/restaurant the main challenges rural women face is cash availability. In most cases compensation from land acquired through privatisation is usually paid to the male household head as such most of the male household do not share the money with their wives. The implication of the above is that rural women faces loss of land and unavailability of cash for them to diversify her source of livelihood.

Evidence from the field also point to the fact that while commercialisation of agriculture and trade liberalisation have created employment which serve as alternative mean to diversify livelihood at the same instance, it has also brought new challenges and risk for them. The commercialisation of agriculture, shift to high value food crop and export has affected rural women's traditional source of livelihood because they are no longer able to rely on subsistence production. The spread of agro industries and agric business offered new opportunities but these opportunities is characterised by seasonal employment. At the end of the seasonal job rural women return to their homes to contend with their traditional source of livelihood during the remaining part of the year due to the seasonal character of the employment opportunities, it will be difficult to bring about lasting change in the status of rural women.

Globalisation policies and changing pattern of labour mobility

The forces of globalisation have accelerated movements within countries. The demand for cheap labour in the newly established commercial farms, emerging agro-industries, agribusiness and establishment of export and crop processing zone in response to foreign capital has influenced the structure and pattern of migration flow in the rural areas. Field work reveals major pattern of migration flow that exist in rural communities. There is movement of labour from rural to rural areas, where rural women migrate to other rural areas to take advantage of employment opportunities as most commercial farms and agro industries women are preferred workers. Secondly, there is the migration of women from rural to urban area, where mostly younger women migrate to urban centres in search of greener pasture. Thirdly, is a forced migration because of displacement as a result of land grab or conflict arising from land grab. The fourth pattern of labour mobility has been from urban centre to rural areas. This is particular so in Kwara state where people migrate from urban centre to rural areas to get hold of employment in agro industries and commercial farm leading to competition between the migrants and the rural dwellers.

Focus Group Discussion revealed that one of the major impacts of labour migration is that it has resulted to the redistribution of responsibilities which has impact on household division of labour and gender relations. One of the impacts on gender relations as noted by respondents is when women who are left behind in the case of male household migration and women who migrate tend to exercise greater autonomy over their way of life than when they are with the male household. In discussing the impact of labour migration on rural women, the different migration flow was taken into consideration. First, situation where women are left behind as a result of male household migration results in the loss of male labour resulting to increase of female-headed household. Hence, the absences of male household make women in rural communities to take up traditionally male task and responsibilities. This new role has challenged the traditional gender based roles in the rural area. In most cases, field work reveals that women in rural communities face difficulties in meeting the needs of their household because of increased burden on their time that may reduce their overall productivity, lower economic and social status, lack of resources and lack of control over resource. It was only in few cases that the migrant male household role and responsibility was taken over by a male relative. In this situation, women opined that they hardly control the household resources and in the absence of their husband the male relative retains ownership and control of decision making and they are deprived from participatory in family or community meetings. Despite these effects, the benefit cited by respondents includes increased self-esteem, independent empowerment as they are able to gain to an extent greater autonomy and they acquire new skills and capacities. Another major benefit is increased family income through remittance, although this present mixed outcomes for women in rural communities. In one outcome, when remittance is sufficient, women in rural communities utilize the income by investing in productive household input and its members, in most cases they use the income to hire labour for certain tasks traditionally done by men and also to hire labour to assume some of the most labour intensive task. In another outcome respondents opined that the effect of remittance on them depends on who control such remittance and the way in which it is spent. Some opined that they are left with the free will to determine how the money should be spent while a other cases, the migrant male household or other male family member retains control of decision making and how such money should be spent. In another outcome, respondents validates that remittance from male household tend to arrive less regularly because some rural women assumed that the male migrants usually spend their money on other women and their personnel use. While others validate that

their male household migrant established secondary household as such there is little or no remittance to the primary household.

When women migrate, Focus Group Discussion reveals that women in rural communities' migration in search for jobs are on temporary basis and in most cases middlemen play central role in organising the migration of women from the rural area. In cases where middlemen are involved in social networks that assist in the migration process of women, their ability to act independently is weakened and in cases where patriarchal control are involved in women in rural communities' migration, it usually results to weakened ability for women to take up new opportunities, such as exposure to markets demands, and new values. Respondents noted that their migration is governed by patriarchal control and gender norms governing their community regarding whether it is appropriate for them to migrate alone. They opine that while male household migration is seen as part of their responsibility as head of the household, women's migration is seen as not proper as such receives social and moral blame for not fulfilling their traditional task as mothers and caretakers. Respondents cited three main reasons for rural to rural migration, (1) lack of access to productive land and resources (2) employment and attractive income opportunities (3) hardship of rural life, patriarchal and social control. Three positive impacts was cited when women migrate, they develop new skills, new experiences, attitude and behavioural patterns and build an independent life. Secondly, the remittance they sent back home provide source of cash income for the family and increase living standard of their household. Thirdly, migration process contributes positively to their self-esteem as they assume more responsibilities.

The migration of women in rural communities has negative impact on their families and communities. In most cases men do not necessarily take on additional domestic role left by women as such negative outcomes on families left behind by female migrants are increase in social problem in the family such as early pregnancy among female child, increased social vice and drug use among male child.

Globalisation policies and changing social structure in rural areas

Within the context of globalisation, changes in the rural economic environment such as increased privatisation of land, commercialisation of agriculture, rural industrialisation and change in labour relation, livelihood diversification amongst others has intensified changes in the rural area. Field work reveals that changes in the role of women as a result of their economic activities have profound effects on the social structure of their household and community. Such social changes within household

and community have an impact on gender relations, gender division of labour and composition of household structure.

Household Division of Labour

The changing rural economy such as increase employment opportunities for rural women and increase in the diversification of different types of nonfarm activities that women in rural communities can engage in are affecting the division of labour within rural household. Most new opportunities brought about by implementation of policies of globalisation such as wage labour through employment or contract farming, income generating activities such as nonfarm and engaging in export of high value crop production has brought about opportunities and challenges. According to local evidence employment opportunities has increased economic returns over traditional economic income and at the same time it has also increased the demand for labour as the new opportunities entails intensive manual jobs and consume more time. Focus Group Discussion reveals that women respond to the new opportunities and challenges by restructuring their household division of labour within household. In household labour women's work is labour intensive as they are responsible for productive and reproductive tasks. In productive labour within household for rural women includes non-remunerated family labour and unpaid labour. At the same time male household might be able to alternate their work performance in line with available work opportunities; rural women do not have same flexibility because their labour within household is socially defined and irreplaceable.

While commercialisation of agriculture and emerging rural industrialisation offer rural employment at the same time they siphon resources such as forest land, fertile arable land and water that are crucial for traditional rural household production. As such, the burden of making up for these resources often fall on the female household, who spend more time and energy looking for these resources. The impacts of the additional workload on women is more challenging as government social support systems and services have been eroded by policies aimed at globalisation. Most social support system and services have been withdrawn and privatised as such most rural women are unable to access those services. According to rural women, they employ different strategies to respond to new opportunities and challenges; first, the girl child is often called upon to assume some of the domestic work while child labour is used to achieve livelihood security. Secondly, rural women opined that they have to work longer hours themselves or uses income to hire additional labour. Thirdly, they switch to less labour intensive crop production and reduce the area of

land under cultivation and finally, especially in Delta state and Kwara, women organise labour exchange with other women.

Changing Structure and Composition of Rural Household.

Field report validates the emerging diversity and increasing number of household headed by women in the rural areas. The structure and composition of rural household are increasingly affected by need to diversify livelihood strategies. Field report validates increased labour mobility as part of household strategies as one of the important reasons for changes in household structures and composition. According to field report, increased labour mobility in the study areas comprised of the migration of younger male or female child from rural areas to urban centres and sometimes across borders in search for greener pasture as such this results to accelerated ageing of the rural population. Secondly, in some cases women in rural communities also migrate in search of employment; in this case it is mostly rural to rural migration. This has a significant impact on household structure and composition. Thirdly, the migration of men from the rural areas leads to increased numbers of female headed households in the rural areas. The impact of these migrations on household structure is that it often results in the redistribution of tasks and responsibilities among those left behind. The rise of female headed household has challenged the traditional gender based roles in rural areas. In such situation, women take over traditionally male tasks and responsibilities. Female heads of household often face greater obstacles than male heads of household because of their lower economic and social status. The difficulties that women in this situation face are inadequate access to land and resources, increased burdens on their time, increased workloads and restrictions on their ownership of property rights. In most cases according to field report when male household migrate they still retained ownership and control of decision making. In some cases, control over resources was passed on to other male relatives in the family.

Field report also reveals that increasing technological advancement and information and communication technology in the rural areas has also influenced change in family composition and structure. Most respondents opined that exposure to new ideas through education and mass media has influenced the younger ones as it has brought about change in attitudes and expectations of young people regarding marriage and child birth.

Impact on Gender Relations

Changes in the rural economy are having profound effect on gender relations. However, field report reveals that despite the fact that the changing rural economy occasioned by globalisation is having impact on

customary decision making patterns as changes in household composition and structure entails renegotiating gender relations. The influence women in rural communities have in decision making process within household and community affairs is still a reflection of the various customs, culture and power relations existing in all the study areas. Although, the changes observed in gender relation are dependent on individual choices, economic factors and socio-cultural values, gender relations in the study areas are embedded in the norms and cultural values of the society and are resistant to change. Changes observed has not fully altered the existing gender relations but has influenced women in Delta and Kwara states to be more active rather than being passive in a male dominated decision making structure.

Furthermore, the most noticeable change has been in area of improvement on women's position, as they are more likely to control resources that directly affect their household members. Respondents from Kwara and Delta states opined that changes in household structure and composition have also influenced their social relations at the community level. In the area of politics, as a result of new influence women in rural communities are gaining new grounds in their household and community, they are being drawn into decision making structures in a bid to use them at the grassroots level. However, they are often not promoted within partly structure to decision-making position.

Diferential impact of contemporary globalisation policies on women in rural communities of Delta, Kano and Kwara States, Nigeria.

The extent to which women in rural communities benefit from the changes occasioned by contemporary globalisation policies varies in accordance to access to productive resources, opportunities, skills and cultural norms practice in rural communities of Delta, Kano and Kwara states, Nigeria. However, the positive and negative impacts of globalisation policies on the economic activities of women in rural communities of Delta, Kano and Kwara states to a very large extent are the same while it differs in term of its impact on their social activities. Women in rural communities of the three study states encounter new opportunities offered by contemporary globalisation as well as experience additional limitations and the negative impacts often overwhelm the positive impact. In all the study states women could not benefit much from the implementation of globalisation policies as it was mediated through existing power and gender relations as such it further exacerbated inequalities.

The differential impact of the changes in rural economy occasioned by globalisation policies are mediated by religious practice and socio-cultural

norms in respective communities. In rural communities of Delta Kano and Kwara states the most viable differential impact is in the social context. Women in rural communities of Delta and Kwara State have been able to adjust to economic change and are gaining new ideas as such, the factors influencing their choice as regard marriage and social relations tend to alter from the traditional forms. However, this is not the case with women in rural communities of Kano state.

The positive or negative impact of globalisation policies on women's economic activities in Delta and Kwara states has resulted to changes in household structure resulting to re-negotiation of gender relations in which outcomes depends on individual and socio-cultural context. The implication of the above is that women in rural communities of Kwara and Delta states are able to take on a more active role in a male dominated decision making structure. However, this is not the case with women in rural communities in Kano state as the positive or negative impact of globalisation policies has not been able to bring about change in their household structure. As such pattern of decision making within household and household structure are not gaining new ground.

Women in Delta state more than women in Kwara and Kano states are becoming more active participants as they are beginning to gain some level of control of resources that directly affect them within household while women in Kano and Kwara are still passive participant in household structure.

Women's reproductive role in Kano do restrict them from seizing new opportunities offered by globalisation policies while women in Delta and Kwara states are not restricted by their reproductive role. In most case they do not witness tension between their reproductive role and productive roles.

Conclusion

The findings revealed that the extent to which women in rural communities could benefit from the changes in the rural economy occasioned by contemporary globalisation policies varies in accordance to their access to productive resources, opportunities, skills, religious practice and socio-cultural norms practice in their communities. Following from the findings, the assumption by national government that developmental problems confronting women in rural communities in Nigeria would be solved by implementing policies of globalisation which is based on neo-liberal ideology of open market activity and growth has yet not been achieved. Since Nigeria embraced globalisation policies by pursuing economic growth through broad based liberalisation, deregulation and privatisation policies, complex and contradictory impacts has been notably

marked in the situation of women in rural communities. The process of economic restructuring which is a major component of globalisation process and introduced into Nigeria as economic reform policies is not home grown but represent the interest of the powerful that are defined as necessity and has become a metaphor for the conditioning framework which shape and standardise national policies. As shown in the study the negative impact of economic restructuring occasion by globalisation policies seem to overwhelm the positive impact on those traditional disadvantaged in the society especially women.

Therefore, there is the conclusion that laws and regulations aimed at liberalisation, deregulation and privatisation have not taken into consideration the concern of the local population especially the rural women, in terms of the impact of these new approach upon the ways and patterns the people have survived over time, including the array of activities they are engaged in. In this circumstance, contemporary globalisation policies does not take into consideration or respond to the needs of rural people especially with regards to natural resources use, yet it is these resources that constitute a major source of livelihood of women in rural communities.

Based on the research findings, in order for women in rural communities to benefit from the opportunities offered by globalisation policies, the following recommendations deserve priority attention; Development organisations and National governments should rethink their approach to policy formulation. Policy intent should be based on inclusive and participatory model; policy formulation should reflect and respond to the diversity of rural societies especially the different realities of women in rural communities. These policies should not only recognise the diverse realities but also should be accompanied by policy implementation that removes the challenges faced by women. Effort should be made to incorporate socio-economic and gender analysis of women into policies, and programmes. This will result in formulating policies responsive to the local peoples need and situation.

Acknowledgements: This article is part of my research thesis titled “Impact of Contemporary Globalisation on Women in Rural Communities of Delat, Kano and Kwara States, Nigeria” Its publication was made possible by support from the Social Science Research Council’s Next Generation of Social Sciences in Africa Fellowship, with Fund provided by Carnegie Corporation of New York. I also acknowledge my supervisors’ Prof. E.V. Clark and Prof. L. Etemike. I am grateful to all who responded to the interviews and participated in the Focus Group Discussion, research

key informants, research assistance and the various scholars whose work was most useful for the study.

References

Acker, J., (2004), Gender Capitalism and Globalization. *In Critical Sociology*. 30(1). 24-46.

Amanor, K.S., (2012), Global Resource Grabs, Agribusiness Concentration and the Smallholder: Two West African Case Studies. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 39(3-4), 731-49. Retrieved from www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2012.676543.pdf on 05/03/2013 on 20/05/2013.

Bergeron, S., (2001), Political Economy Discourse of Globalization and Feminist Politics. *In Signs*. 20(4): 983-106.

Berhman, J., Meinzen - Dick, R., Quisumbing, A., (2012), The Gender Implications of Large Scale Land Deals, *Journal of Peasant Studies*. 39(1): 49 - 79.

Bhagwati, J., (2004), *In Defence of Globalization*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Blackden, G.M. and Ganagarajah, R.S., (2003), Gender and Growth in Africa: Evidence and Issues. Paper Prepared for the United Nations Economic Commission for Africa Expert Meeting on Pro-Growth. Kampala, Uganda.

Borras, S. Jr. and Franco, J.C., (2011), *Political Dynamics of Land Grabbing in Southeast Asia: Understanding Europe's Role*. Discussion Paper, January 2011. Amsterdam: Transnational Institute (TNI). Retrieved from www.tni.org/.../political-dynamics-land-grab.pdf on 05/03/2013.

Cacatay, N., (2003), Gender Budgets and Beyond: Feminist Fiscal Policy in the Context of Globalization. *In Gender and Development*. 11(1): 15-24. Retrieved from www.genderanddevelopment.org/gender-budget-cacatay.pdf. on 05/04/2012.

Canagarajah, S. and Bhattamishra, R., (2001), Non-Farm Income, Gender and Inequality: Evidence from the Rural Ghana and Uganda. *In Food Policy*. 26(4): 405-420.

Chen, M.A. and Carr, M., (2002), *Globalization and the Informal Economy: How Global Trade and Investment Impact on the Working Poor*. Working Paper on the Informal Economy. No 1. Geneva: International Labour Organization.

Cotula, L., (2012), The International Political Economy of the Global Land Rush: a Critical Appraisal of Trends, Scale, Geography and Drivers. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 39(3).

www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2012.674940.pdf on 05/03/2013

De Schutter, O., (2011), How Not to Think Land Grabbing: Three Critiques of Large-Scale Investments in Farmland. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 38(2), 249–79.

www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2011.559008.pdf on 05/03/2013

Deo, N., (2006), Is Globalization Our Friend? Women's Aillies in the Developing World. In *Current History*. 105(681) 105-111.

Dex, S., (1985), The Sexual Division of Work. In *Harvester* 6(1).

Drezner, D., (2004), Globalisation Without Riot. New York Times. April 18.

Dugger, C.W., (2004), *Supermarket Giants Crush Central American Firms*. New York: Times December 28.

Fairhead, J., Leach, M. and Scoones, I., (2012), Green Grabbing: a New Appropriation of Nature? *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 39(2), 237–261. www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2012.671770.pdf on 05/03/2013

Clark, Victor, Esekumemu and Efanodor, Otmokiniovo, Harriet, (2015), Land Grab as Developmental Strategy: Privatisation of Land and Women in Rural Communities of Kwara State, Nigeria. *Journal of Social and Management Science*. vol 10 Nos 1: 138-149. Abraka, Delta State: Grace Communication International.

Efanodor, Omokoniovo, Harriet, (2015), Liberalisation of Oil Exploration: Land Grab and the Travail of Women in Rural Communities of Delta State, Nigeria. In Ewhrudjakpor, Atubi and Etemike (Eds) *Oil Theft, Environmental Degradation and the Reciprocal Responsibilities of Host Communities and the Government in Nigeria: A Book of Readings*. Abraka, Delta State: Grace Communication International, pp. 57-67.

Etemike, Laz and Omokiniovo Harriet Efanodor, (2015), Contemporary Globalisation and the Rural Economy in Nigeria. *America International Journal of Social Science*. vol. 4, Nos 3:14-27. Center for Promoting Ideas, U.S.A. www.aijssnet.com Index in DRJI (Directory of Research Journal Indexing).

Efanodor, H.O., Developmental Strategies and Cultural Dynamics in Rural Nigeria. In Falola and Kalu (eds) *Africa and Globalisation: Challenges of Governance and Creativity*. Cham, Palgrave Macmillan 2018, p. 144.

Efanodor O.H., (2016), *Large Scale Land Deals and Women in Rural Communities in Nigeria: Paradox of a Developmental Paradigm*. Research and Social Change. 8(1):

Gender in Nigeria Report, (2012), *Improving the Lives of Girls and Women in Nigeria: Issues, Policies and Action*. (2nd Edition) UKAID, British Council Nigeria. Retrieved from

www.did.gov.uk/documents/publications//gender-nigeria2012.pdf on 05/11/12.

Giridharadas, A., (2006), *International Business: India, known for Outsourcing, Expand in Industry*. New York Times. May 14.

Gray, M., Kittison, M.C. and Sandhitz, (2006), Women and Globalisation: A study of 180 Nation 1975-2000. *International Organisation*. 60(2); 297-303.

Hall, D., (2011), Land Control, Land Grabs, and Southeast Asian Crop Booms. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 38(4), 837-57. Retrieved from www.iss.nl/.../iss/.../80_Derek_Hall.pdf on 05/03/2013

Hassan, R.H., (1992), *Nigerian Womanhood. Kadunna, Nigeria: Jel Publications*.

Hofman, I. and Ho P., (2012), China's 'Developmental Outsourcing': a Critical Examination of Chinese Global 'Land Grabs' Discourse. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 39(1), 1-48.

www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2011.653109.pdf on 05/03/2013

IFAD, (2009), Federal Republic of Nigeria Country Programme Evaluation Retrieved from www.ifad.org/evaluation/public-htm/eit/do/country/nigeria.pdf 3/9/12.

Jain, D., (2000), Feminization and Globalization. A Synopsis Series: NCRW, Cuny and Japan Preparatory Committee Economic Dimension of Globalization Panel.

Kabeer, N. and Mahmud S., (2004), Globalization, Gender and Poverty: Bangladeshi Women Workers in Export and Local Market. In *Journal of International Development*. 16(1): 93-109

Kachika, T., (2010), Land Grabbing in Africa: a Review of the Impact of Possible Policy Responses. Retrieved from

www.oxfamblogs.org/eastafrica/wp-content/uploads/2010/11/Landgrabbinginafrica-kachika.pdf on 05/03/2013.

Kay, S. and Franco, J., (2012), *The Global Water Grab: a Primer*. Amsterdam: Transnational Institute. Retrieved from

www.tni.org/.../primer/global-water-grab.pdf on 05/03/2013.

Levien, M., (2011), Special Economic Zones and Accumulation by Dispossession in India. *Journal of Agrarian Change*, 11(4), 454-83. Retrieved from www.indiancites.berkeley.edu/.../504381.pdf on 05/03/2013.

Li, T. M., (2011), Forum on Global Land Grabbing: Centering Labor in the Land Grab Debate. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 38(2). 281-98. Retrieved from www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2011.559009.pdf on 05/03/2013

McGovern-Lindo, L., (1997), *Filipino Peasant Women: Exploitation and Resistance*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

McGovern-Lindo, L., (2007), Neo-Liberal Globalisation in the Philippines: its Impact on Filipino Women and their Forms of Resistance. In *Journal of Developing Societies* 23(1-2):15-35.

McGovern-Lindo, L. and Wailimann, I., (2009), Neo-Liberal Globalisation and Third World Women: Exploitation, Coping and Resistance. In Lindio-Mc Goven and Wallimann (ed.) *Globalization and Third World Women: Exploitation, Coping and Resistance*. United Kingdom: Ashgate Press.

McMichael, P., (2012), The Land Grab and Corporate Food Regime Restructuring. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 39(3-4), 681-701. Retrieved from www.iss.ni/...77-Philp-Mcmicheal.pdf on 05/03/2013.

Meyer, H., (1998), *Human Rights and International Political Economy in Third World Nations*. Westport: Praeger Publishing.

Mutopo, P. and Chiweshe, M., (2012), Large Scale Land Deals, Global Capital and the Politics of Livelihoods: Experiences of women small-holder Farmers in Chisumbanje, Zimbabwe. A paper presented at the international conference on Global Land Grabbing iiOctober 17-19. Retrieved from www.furture-agriculture.org/.../global-land-grad.pdf on 05/03/2013.

Osmani, S. R., (2005), *The Impact of Globalization on Poverty in Bangladesh*, Working Paper No 65, Policy Integration Department, National Policy Group. International Labour Office, Geneva: International Labour Organization.

Pearson, R., (2003), Feminist Responses to Economic Globalization. In *Gender and Development*. 11(1): 25-34. Retrieved from

www.genderanddevelopment.org/gender-budget-cagatay.pdf on 05/04/2012.

Peluso, N. and Lund, C., (2011), New Frontiers of Land Control: Introduction. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 38(4), 667-81. www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2011.607692.pdf on 05/03/2013.

Poe, S.C., Wendel-Blunt, and Ho, K., (1997), Global Patterns in the Achievement of Women's Human Rights to Equality. In *Human Right Quarterly*. 19(14): 813-835.

Przeworski, A. and Vreeland, J., (2000), The Effect of IMF Programs on Economic Growth. In *Journal of Development Economics*. 62(2): 385-421.

Purkayastha, B and Mayumbar, S., (2009), Neo-Liberalism and Sex Trafficking in South Asia. In Lindio-Mc Goven and Wallimann (ed) *Globalization and Third World Women: Exploitation, Coping and Resistance*. United Kingdom: Ashgate Press.

Rao, A. and Kelletter, D., (2005), Is There Life After Gender Mainstreaming? In *Gender and Development*. 13(2): 57-69. Retrieved

from www.genderanddevelopment.org/gender-budget-cagatay.pdf. on 05/04/2012.

Richards, D.L., (2007), Women's Status and Economic Globalization. In *International Studies Quarterly*. 51:855-876. Retrieved from <http://www.128.226.23//dirnew/pubs.isq/women.status.richard.pdf> on 29/05/12.

Ritter, A. and Pollock, D., (2001), Look South for Example of the Benefits of Open Trade. In *The Ottawa Citizen*.

Rodrik, D., (1997) *Has Globalization Gone too far?* Washing D.C: Institute for International Economics.

Sanderson, K. and Crompton, K., (1990), *Gendered Jobs and Social Change*. London: Unwin Hyman.

Sarkar, S. and (2009), Globalization and Women at Work: A Feminist Discourse. A paper Presented at the International Feminist Summit, Townville Australia. Retrieved from

www.feministagenda.org.au/fs%20paper/sumita.2.pdf on 29/5/12.

Sequin, S., (2000), Gender, Inequality and Economic Growth: A Cross-Country Analysis. In *World Development*. 28(7): 1211-1230.

Sethuraman, S.U., (1998), *Gender, Informality and Poverty: A Global Review*. Report for the World Bank Poverty Reduction and Economic Management Department. Washington, D. C: World Bank.

Sharma and Sengupta, (1996), Gender Exploitation in Global Economy. In Llebsur, R. (ed.), *Social Interaction for Justice*. Mumbai: Tala Institute of Social Sciences publications.

Sommerville, M., (2011), *The Global Land Grab and Marginalization in Canada: the Case of One Earth Farms*. A paper presented at the Land Deal Politics Initiative (LDPI) Conference on Land Grabs, IDS University of Sussex, April 2011. Available from: www.iss.nl/ldpi on 05/03/2013.

Standing, G., (1999), Global Feminization Through Flexible Labour: A Theme Revisited. In *World Development*. 27(3): 583-602.

United Nations 1999/2000 *World Survey on the Role of Women in Development: Globalization, Gender and Work*. UN: Department of Economic and Social Affairs

United Nations Development Program, (1999), *Human Development Report*. New York: United Nations.

Visser, O. and Spoor, M., (2011), Land Grabbing in Post-Soviet Eurasia: The World's Largest Agricultural Land Reserves at Stake. *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 38(1), 299-323. Retrieved from

www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2011.559010.pdf on 05/03/2013

Vreeland, J., (2003), *The IMF and Economic Development*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Walby, S., (1990), *Theorizing Patriarchy*. Oxford: Blackwell Publishers.

Williams, M., (2000), *Some Preliminary Remark on Gender Analysis of Trade and Investment Issues in the Context of Mobilising International Resources for Development Financing*. New York: United Nations

Wily, A. L., (2012), *Looking back to see forward: the legal niceties of land theft in land rushes*. Journal of Peasant Studies, 39(3–4), 751–75. retrieved from www.tandfonline.com/.../03066150.2012.674033.pdf on 05/03/2013

Women's Environmental and Development Organization, (1998), *Mapping Progress: Assessing Implementation of the Beijing Platform*. New York: Women's Environmental and Development Organization.

Woodhouse, P. and Ganho, A.S., (2011), *Is Water the Hidden Agenda of Agricultural Land Acquisition in Sub-Saharan Africa?* A paper presented at the Land Deal Politics Initiative (LDPI) conference on land grabs, IDS University of Sussex, April 2011. Available from: www.iss.nl/ldpi [Accessed 15 January 2012].

THE ROLE OF WOMEN IN SHAPING FOREIGN POLICY AT THE LEVEL OF THE EUROPEAN UNION AND THE STATES OF THE MIDDLE EAST (AN APPROACH FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF THE FEMINIST THEORY OF INTERNATIONAL RELATIONS)

Dana Gabriela Pleșa*

danaplesa1977@gmail.com

Abstract: *In the twentieth century, the way women are seen and perceived has changed substantially from the nineteenth century, especially because of the feminist movements that have advocated for the same rights as men. In the 21st century, the role of women has become a substantial one at the level of the states but also of the international organizations. The present article aims to analyze how women have influenced foreign policy at EU level as well as in the states of the Middle East. The working hypothesis of the article is that women managed to directly influence the foreign policy of the EU member states, the union but also of the states of the Middle East formally through the leadership positions they held during 2014-2019, but also informally. At the same time, the article aims to highlight the role of women as decision makers and in the outlining of foreign policy.*

Keywords: *feminism, European Union, Middle East, women, gender equality*

Introduction

In the twentieth century, the way women are seen and perceived has changed substantially, especially since in most states they have received the same rights as men. However, this has not stopped discrimination against women, a practice that is common today. The first country to offer women the right to vote is New Zealand, at the end of the 19th century, more precisely in 1883. Then gradually the other countries began to offer women the right to vote, with most countries granting this right to vote in the twentieth century¹: Australia in 1902, Finland in 1906, followed by Denmark, Norway and Iceland. Of course, this is not enough considering

* **PhD. student 3rd year, Faculty of Political Science, University of Bucharest.**

¹ Mihaela Miroiu, *The road towards autonomy; feminist political theories*, Iasi, Polirom Publishing House, 2004, p. 55.

the many differences and prejudices that existed and still exist between women and men. Thus, in the '60s of the last century against the backdrop of an increase in the popularity of the "Women's Liberation Movement", a series of women's protests took place in western states demanding equality in all spheres of society.² Although they managed to obtain more rights, the women did not have a salary equal to that of men who held the same position. Also, they did not have access to important decision-making positions and in politics it was very difficult for them to get elected in public positions at local or national level.³ So in the '80s, a feminist theory developed in the field of international relations, which offers its own view on global events, based on gender. This came in parallel with the feminist movement and quickly began to attract supporters.

Thus, feminists argue that "political thinking was almost exclusively male and inevitably inspired by the experiences of thinkers."⁴ In other words, everything we know about the world today is from a male perspective and feminists want to provide a feminine knowledge and perspective of history and beyond. Over time, the events have been at the center of the action of men and less women, whose role is less talked about.

But what was the role of women in drawing up the foreign policy lines of the states within the European Union and the Middle East during 2014-2019? What about the European Union's foreign policy? Can we talk about an increase in the role of women in European decision-making? In the next chapter I will try to give an answer based on the hypothesis that women in their role as mothers, wives, sisters, or leaders but also through their role in society have managed to directly influence the foreign policy of the EU member states but also in the union through the leadership positions they held during 2014-2019. At the same time, in the period mentioned above we are seeing an increase in the role of women at a European level. Also, the level of democratization of each state played a decisive role in this process, promoting and respecting policies related to gender equality, human rights and especially those of women.

In addition to this, the paper will provide an analysis of the events from the perspective of the feminist theory of international relations. At the beginning, I will make a presentation of the feminist theory of international relations. Then, I will provide data on the level of democratization of the Member States to underline its importance in the ascension of women in the leadership positions at the state level and at the European Union level. Last but not least, I will try to provide examples of

² John Farndom, *50 genius ideas*, Bucharest, Litera Publishing House, 2012, p. 286.

³ *Ibidem*, p. 287.

⁴ Mihaela Miroiu, *cited works*, p. 44.

women heads of state and government within the European Union who have been able to directly influence the foreign policy of both a state and that of the Union, as well as of countries in the Middle East.

Feminism as a theory of international relations

Thus, as a whole, the feminist theory of international relations introduces the concept of gender as a tool for theoretical analysis of international relations. At the same time, it challenges power and knowledge, elements that are characteristic of mainstream trends in international relations, realism and liberalism.⁵ It should also be mentioned that "feminists define gender, in a symbolic sense, as a set of variables but socially and culturally constructed characteristics"⁶. Therefore, they support the existence of stereotypes such as autonomy, power, public space, rationality that are attributed to men and dependence, weakness, private space and emotion that are attributed to women⁷. Moreover, these patterns are not generally valid, we can see everywhere men who are fearful, sensitive, dependent and much weaker in terms of physical strength than a woman. At the same time, we can see courageous, powerful and independent women who can do much better in some situations but also in the performance of positions than a man could have done.

Returning to the feminist theory of international relations, we can easily observe that within mainstream theories the main topics are the state, the international system or the market. Feminist theory comes with a new approach that pays special attention to the human being, which until then had been ignored by other theories⁸. Thus, "feminist writings on international relations have focused on individuals in their social, political and economic settings, rather than on decontextualized unitary states and anarchical international structures"⁹.

In addition to this, feminists have a different view on knowledge, and here we can include history, science, geography, but also other fields, they

⁵ *Ibidem*, p. 233.

⁶ Ann Tickner, "You Just Don't Understand: Troubled Engagements between Feminists and IR Theorists", in *International Studies Quarterly*, Vol. 41, No. 4, 1997, p.614.

⁷ *Ibidem*.

⁸ Ruxandra Ivan, *Critical Theory*, in Eugen Huzum (coord.), *Political theories and ideologies*, Iasi, European Institute Publishing House, 2013, p. 264.

⁹ Ann Tickner, "You Just Don't Understand: Troubled Engagements between Feminists and IR Theorists", in *International Studies Quarterly*, Vol. 41, No. 4, 1997, p. 616.

say it is not a universal and objective one¹⁰. They see knowledge as a field created largely by men, from their visions of the world and their experiences¹¹. Thus, feminists want to bring to the attention of the world a truly universal knowledge. Until about a century ago, women were excluded from three major centers of knowledge: the Jesuit order, trading companies and government institutions.¹² Therefore, feminism aims to offer a feminine point of view on history, international relations, politics as well as other fields¹³. As for the war, feminists focus on the events of its time, on the destructions and atrocities that occur such as crimes, rapes, ethnic cleansing and less on the aftermath of the war.¹⁴

In the 21st century, in terms of women's rights, the situation has changed significantly from a century ago. We can see women in very important positions both in the big international companies, international organizations such as the United Nations, the World Bank, the European Union, the International Monetary Fund but also in high positions at the state level. Regarding the political sphere, we can give as examples the famous "iron lady" of Great Britain, Margaret Thatcher, Angela Merkel, Hillary Clinton etc.

However, the differences and discrimination that women face have not completely disappeared, they continue up to this day. In countries such as Saudi Arabia, Afghanistan, Iran, Iraq and many other states where democracy is lacking or is in its infancy, women's rights are not respected. Globally, women are the least paid for the work they do compared to men. A good example is given by Cynthia Enloe in her famous work "*Bananas, Beaches and Bases: Making Feminist Sense of International Politics*". It provides the example of large companies such as Nike and Reebok, which have factories in India, China and South Korea, where women who are constantly subjected to abuse and discrimination at work. The interest of the employer for women comes in the context of women being more docile, submitting and performing some jobs better than men and if they get married or pregnant they are fired.¹⁵ Nevertheless, women are able to

¹⁰ Ann Tickner, "On the Frontlines or Sidelines of Knowledge and Power? Feminist Practices of Responsible Scholarship", *International Studies Review*, Vol. 8, No. 3, 2006, pp. 387-388.

¹¹ *Ibidem*.

¹² *Ibidem*.

¹³ Ruxandra Ivan, *cited works*, p. 264.

¹⁴ Ann Tickner, "You Just Don't Understand: Troubled Engagements between Feminists and IR Theorists", in *International Studies Quarterly*, Vol. 41, No. 4, 1997, p. 624.

¹⁵ Cynthia Enloe, *Bananas, Beaches and Bases: Making Feminist Sense of International Politics*, California, University of California Press, 2000, pp. 57-64.

overcome these moments and continue to fight for equality and better treatment from men.

As a theory of international relations feminism has appeared with some delay. At the end of the 80s "the emergence of critical currents and the attack against "<<rationalism>>", of the positivist methods of analysis allowed the development of feminist theories"¹⁶. Moreover, what was the basis of the foundation of feminist theory were the "alliances of feminists in the natural social sciences and the humanities with activists in the women's movements"¹⁷ for health, the environment and the acquiring of certain civil rights. Proponents of this theory have sought to analyze the gender inequalities that exist in all societies as well as the effect they have on women and other marginalized groups, in order to bring about change¹⁸. Also, we can see in the early 80s the emergence of a first generation of feminist theorists who "sought to challenge the conventional ontological and epistemological orientation in the field, engaging in the so-called" "<<third debate>>" "between the positivist and the post-positivist theorists"¹⁹. Therefore "the feminist theorists have challenged the exclusivist, state-centric and positivist nature of the discipline, especially at the meta-theoretic level"²⁰. The second generation of feminist theorists come with a new approach, they "intend to make gender relations a central analytical category for the studies of foreign policy, security or world political economy, by exploring particular historical and geographical contexts"²¹.

Besides this, it should be mentioned that we can speak of three types of feminist theories: *empirical feminism*, *analytical feminism* and *normative feminism*. As for empirical feminism, it emphasizes the woman, the role she has played and has in society, but also the way in which women have succeeded and succeed in influencing the world. Thus, empirical feminism "explores gender as an empirical dimension of international relations"²². Analytical feminism, "uses gender as a theoretical category to highlight the gender biases associated with concepts

¹⁶ Șerban Filip Cioculescu, *Introduction in the Theory of International Relations*, Bucharest, Military Publishing House, 2007, p. 252.

¹⁷ Ann Tickner, "On the Frontlines or Sidelines of Knowledge and Power? Feminist Practices of Responsible Scholarship", *International Studies Review*, Vol. 8, No. 3, 2006, p.386.

¹⁸ *Ibidem*.

¹⁹ Jaqui True, *Feminism*, in Scott Burchill (et all), *International relations' theories*, translated by Ruxandra Ivan, Iasi, European Institute Publishing House, 2008, p. 235.

²⁰ *Ibidem*.

²¹ *Ibidem*, p. 236.

²² *Ibidem*, p. 234.

in international relations"²³ as well as their aspects. It also emphasizes the feminist view of security and the state. Normative feminism "reflects on the theorizing process as part of the normative agenda for political and social changes"²⁴. Therefore, the present paper aims to analyze the events from the perspective of empirical feminism.

The role of women in decision-making in the EU and in the states of the Middle East

The role of women in shaping foreign policy but also in state affairs is growing in America, Europe, Asia, Australia, the Middle East and Africa. I will deal with this subject more widely in the academic environment. Therefore, I will try to provide a number of examples that illustrate the ability of some women to successfully cope with positions of foreign policy but also as heads of state and government. In the period 2010-2020 there was an increase in the role of women at an international level and a greater presence of women in the management of international organizations and as heads of state and government. Obviously, in the western states, associated with the highest rate of democratization, the number of women ambassador, foreign minister, prime minister and president is much higher than the states with an early or authoritarian democracy.

Therefore, all of these examples aim to highlight the growing role of women in shaping foreign policy lines in Europe, America, Australia, the Middle East, Africa and Asia. This shows that women do not fully fall into those stereotypes promoted in many societies that they cannot cope with and are not suitable for such positions. These stereotypes affect the way people think and automatically the way women are perceived.²⁵

Feminist researchers claim that women leaders in Western states tend to oppose the use of force in international actions and are more inclined to support humanitarian interventions²⁶. They also argue that in countries where there is greater gender inequality, they are more likely to engage in war or use violence.²⁷ An interesting insight into the role of women in foreign policy decision making is found at Jeffreys-Jone, author of "Changing Differences: Women and the Shaping of American Foreign Policy, 1917-1994." The author argues that there are three models of women leaders: the "*self-made*", which are inclined to war and gives as examples Margaret Thatcher and Golda Meir, the second model "*iron*

²³ *Ibidem*.

²⁴ *Ibidem*.

²⁵ Carol Cohn, *War, Wimps, and Women: Talking gender and thinking war*, in Miriam Cooke and Angela Woollacott (eds.), *Gendering War Talk*, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1993, p. 229.

²⁶ *Ibidem*, p. 240.

²⁷ *Ibidem*.

dove" type of strong woman, iron lady, however inclined towards peace, and the third model of "*dynastic leaders*" defines the women who inherit both the foreign policy lines and the privileges of the respective state.²⁸ In fact, he also argues that women, in foreign policy decisions, are less inclined to war than men and seek to have as few victims as possible.²⁹ An interesting game made by the Research And Development Corporation (RAND) that created three groups each of three boys and three girls who were in a game that simulated a war between the United States and the Soviet Union. Also, the games were held simultaneously and in the end in all three groups the men used the first atomic bomb while the women did not resort to this gesture.³⁰ Following some analysis, feminist theorists have shown that in the field of foreign policy, among the political decision-makers, the majority are men and less women and the first, according to feminists, make decisions in the name of the national interest, a rather abstract term.³¹ However, in recent years, women have been able to enter the centers of decision and power within which foreign policy directions are drawn. In the observations made below I mentioned only a small part of the large number of women who have held such positions globally.

During 2001-2005, Condoleezza Rice was a security adviser to George W. Bush. From 2005-2009, he served as Secretary of State of the United States, where he played a role in the foreign policy of the United States³². Also, Hillary Clinton United States Secretary of State from 2009-2013. In 2016, she was the first woman nominated as a candidate in the US presidential election by the Democratic Party³³. In 2010, Julia Gillard became the first woman in Australia to succeed as Prime Minister³⁴.

In 2006, Ellen Johnson Sirleaf was the first woman elected to the position of President of Liberia and managed to obtain more mandates

²⁸ Rhodri Jeffreys-Jone, *Changing Differences: Women and the Shaping of American Foreign Policy, 1917-1994*, New Brunswick, N.J, Rutgers University Press, 1995, p. 242.

²⁹ *Ibidem*, p. 254.

³⁰ Carol Cohn, *cited work*, p. 233.

³¹ Jaqui True, *cited work*, p. 239.

³² Francis Fukuyama, *America at the Crossroads: Democracy, Power, and the Neoconservative Legacy*, translated by Andreea and Nicolae Năstase, Antet XX Press, Prahova, 2006, pp. 42-54.

³³ Patrick Healy, Jonathan Martin, "Democrats Make Hillary Clinton a Historic Nominee", *The New York Times*, 26.07.2016, available at <https://www.nytimes.com/2016/07/27/us/politics/dnc-speakers-sanders-clinton.html>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

³⁴ James Grubel, "Australia gets first woman PM", *Reuters*, 24.06.2010, available at <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-australia-politics/australia-gets-first-woman-pm-idUSTRE65N00120100624>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

until 2018 when she retired from political life³⁵ becoming, also, the first woman on the African continent to hold such a position ³⁶. Ellen Johnson Sirleaf held this position in July 2011, Christine Lagarde became the first woman appointed to the position of director of the International Monetary Fund³⁷ and recorded the same performance in 2019 when it was appointed to the head of the European Central Bank³⁸. In 2013 Park Geun Hye was elected President of the Republic of Korea and Michelle Bachelet is elected the first woman to serve as President of Chile ³⁹. In January 2016, Tsai Ing-wen became the first woman elected as Taiwan's president ⁴⁰. In April 2016, Aung San Suu Kyi was elected as the first female Prime Minister of Myanmar ⁴¹. In 2019, Sheikh Hasina has won the third consecutive term as the Prime Minister of Bangladesh.

Regarding the representation of women at the decision-making level of the states, the political regime plays a decisive role. In addition to this we also have social causes such as traditional gender stereotypes and lack of support for women⁴². Mostly, the number of women in national parliaments, governments, but also their presence in the position of prime minister and president is directly influenced by the level of democratization of the respective state. In 2019, The Economist achieved a top of the states with the highest level of democratization⁴³. This mentions

³⁵ *Ibidem*.

³⁶ Tamasin Ford, "Ellen Johnson Sirleaf: The legacy of Africa's first elected female president", *BBC*, 22.01.2018, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-africa-42748769>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

³⁷ ***, "Christine Lagarde resigns as head of IMFth", *BBC*, 16.07.2019, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/business-49009226>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

³⁸ Silvia Amaro, "ECB chief Christine Lagarde speaks of a new order in the world economy at debut speech", *CNBC*, available at

<https://www.cnbc.com/2019/11/22/christine-lagarde-first-speech-as-european-central-bank-president.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

³⁹ Sophie Gorman, "Chile's first female president Michelle Bachelet will rise to human rights mission", *France 24*, 10.08.2018, available at

<https://www.france24.com/en/20180810-chile-first-female-president-michelle-bachelet-rise-human-rights-challenge>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁴⁰ ***, "Tsai Ing-wen elected Taiwan's first female president", *BBC*, 17.01.2016, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-asia-35333647>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁴¹ Oliver Holmes, "Aung San Suu Kyi set to get PM-type role in Myanmar government", *The Guardian*, 01.04.2016, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/apr/01/aung-san-suu-kyi-set-to-get-pm-type-role-in-myanmar-government>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁴² ***, "Gender balance in decision-making", *European Commission*, available at https://ec.europa.eu/info/policies/justice-and-fundamental-rights/gender-equality/gender-balance-decision-making-positions_en, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁴³ ***, "Democracy Index 2019: A year of democratic setbacks and popular protest", *The Economist Intelligence Unit*, available at

167 states, out of which the members of the European Union are in the first 63 states⁴⁴. At EU level, the percentage of women in the European Parliament has increased 30% in the 2005-2009 term to 40% in the 2019-2024 term⁴⁵. Following the elections to the European Parliament in the spring of 2019, Austria, Luxembourg, Malta, France, Slovenia, Latvia and the Netherlands obtained equal numbers of men and women in the European Parliament, while Sweden and Finland have more women than men⁴⁶. The biggest gender difference is found in Germany where out of 96 European parliamentarians, 61 are men and only 35 women⁴⁷.

In 2014, Federica Mogherini was elected High Representative of the European Union for Foreign Affairs and Security Policy, in other words the head of European affairs⁴⁸. Mogherini was the first woman to hold this position, which gave her a substantial role in the European Union's foreign policy. The role of women in drawing up foreign policy directions continued to be increased in the Member States during 2014-2019. In 2014, Dalia Grybauskaitė wins presidential elections in Lithuania for a second term⁴⁹. In the same year, Marie-Louise Coleiro Preca is elected President of Malta for a five-year term (2014-2019)⁵⁰. Also in 2014, Laimdota Straujuma became the first woman to hold the position of Prime Minister of Latvia⁵¹. In 2014 Ewa Kopacz was appointed Prime Minister of

www.eiu.com/Handlers/WhitepaperHandler.ashx?fi=Democracy-Index-2019.pdf&mode=wp&campaignid=democracyindex2019, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁴⁴ *Ibidem*.

⁴⁵ ***, "Women in the European Parliament (infographics)", *European Parliament*, 12.09.2019, available at

<https://www.europarl.europa.eu/news/en/headlines/society/20190226STO28804/women-in-the-european-parliament-infographics>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁴⁶ *Ibidem*.

⁴⁷ *Ibidem*.

⁴⁸ Daniela Vincenti, "Profile: Federica Mogherini, the next EU foreign affairs chief", *Euractiv*, 31.08.2014, available at <https://www.euractiv.com/section/global-europe/news/profile-federica-mogherini-the-next-eu-foreign-affairs-chief/>, accessed on 20.10.2020.

⁴⁹ ***, "Lithuania's Dalia Grybauskaitė wins re-election after run-off", *BBC*, 25.05.2014, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-27571609>, accessed on 05.01.2020.

⁵⁰ ***, "Presidents of Malta, Ms. Marie-Louise Coleiro Preca", Malta Government Website, available at

<https://www.gov.mt/en/Government/Government%20of%20Malta/Presidents%20of%20Malta/Pages/Marie-Louise-Coleiro-Preca.aspx>, accessed on 12.01.2020.

⁵¹ Cynthia Kroet, „Laimdota Straujuma: Latvia's prime minister", *Politico*, 18.12.2014, available at <https://www.politico.eu/article/laimdota-straujuma-latvias-prime-minister/>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Poland⁵² and in 2015 was followed by another woman, Beata Szydło, in the government⁵³. In 2015, Kolinda Grabar-Kitarović is elected the first woman president in Croatia⁵⁴. In 2016, Theresa May was elected Prime Minister of the United Kingdom⁵⁵ and in the same year the Estonian parliament elected Kersti Kaljulaid as the first woman president⁵⁶. In 2017, Angela Merkel wins Germany's fourth term as chancellor⁵⁷. Merkel is a symbol of feminism and enjoys great popularity among the Germans and beyond, being declared the most powerful woman of the year by Forbes magazine 2015⁵⁸ and then the prestigious magazine "Time" declared her the personality of the year⁵⁹. Merkel is Germany's second longest-serving chancellor after Helmut Kohl holding this position for 15 years⁶⁰.

In January 2018, Viorica Dăncilă became the first woman in Romania to hold the position of Prime Minister⁶¹. In March 2019, Zuzana Čaputová was elected the first woman to serve as President of Slovakia⁶². In May

⁵² Marcin Sobczyk, Patryk Wasilewski, Poland's Prime Minister Names New Cabinet, *The Wall Street Journal*, available at <https://www.wsj.com/articles/polands-prime-minister-names-new-cabinet-1411117860>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁵³ ***, "Poland: Mateusz Morawiecki to replace Beata Szydło as prime minister", *Deutsche Welle*, 07.12.2017, available at <https://www.dw.com/en/poland-mateusz-morawiecki-to-replace-beata-szydlo-as-prime-minister/a-41704817>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁵⁴ ***, "Grabar-Kitarovic elected Croatia's first woman president", *BBC*, 12.01.2015, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-30765822>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁵⁵ Gavin Stramp, „Who is Theresa May: A profile of UK's new prime minister”, *BBC*, 25.07.2016, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-politics-36660372>, accessed on 05.01.2020.

⁵⁶ ***, "Estonia parliament votes for first female president", *The Guardian*, 03.10.2016, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/oct/03/estonia-first-female-president-kersti-kaljulaid>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁵⁷ ***, "German election: Merkel wins fourth term, AfD nationalists rise", *BBC*, 25.09.2017, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-41376577>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁵⁸ ***, "The World's 100 Most Powerful Women", *Forbes*, 10.12.2015, available at <http://www.forbes.com/power-women/list/#tab:overall>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁵⁹ Karl Vick, "Berlin with Simon Shuster", *Time*, 10.12.2015, available at <http://time.com/time-person-of-the-year-2015-angela-merkel/>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁶⁰ Robert Lupitu, "Angela Merkel became today the second most longevive chancellor in the history of Federal Republic of Germany", *Calea Europeana*, 22.12.2019, available at <https://www.caleaeuropeana.ro/angela-merkel-a-devenit-astazi-al-doilea-cel-mai-longeviv-cancelar-din-istoria-republicii-federale-germania/>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁶¹ Iulian Anghel, "The first female Prime-minister in the Romanian history", *Financial Newspaper*, 17.01.2018, available at <https://www.zf.ro/eveniment/prima-femeie-prim-ministru-din-istoria-romaniei-16930172>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁶² Shaun Walker, "Slovakia's first female president hails victory for progressive values", *The Guardian*, 31.03.2019, available at

2019, Brigitte Bierlein was named Austria's first female chancellor⁶³. In June 2019, Mette Frederiksen was elected to the position of Prime Minister of Denmark⁶⁴. In October 2019, in Belgium Sophie Wilmès is elected the first woman prime minister in the history of the country⁶⁵. Sanna Marin enters the position of Prime Minister of Finland at just 34 years of age, becoming the youngest person in the world to hold such a position⁶⁶. In January 2020, Katerina Sakellaropoulou was elected the first woman president of Greece⁶⁷.

Also in 2019, Ursula von der Leyen was elected the first woman to lead the European Commission⁶⁸. As regards the composition of the European Commission, it has made sure that the number of women is almost equal to that of men. Within the European Commission there are 11 female commissioners and 15 male commissioners⁶⁹. A considerable increase compared to the composition of the previous commission (2014-2019), which had 18 male commissioners and only 8 female commissioners⁷⁰. At

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/mar/31/slovakia-elects-zuzana-caputova-first-female-president>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁶³ ***, "Austria appoints Brigitte Bierlein as its first female chancellor", *The Guardian*, 30.05.2019, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/may/30/austria-appoints-brigitte-bierlein-as-its-first-female-chancellor-sebastian-kurz>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁶⁴ Bianca Britton, "Mette Frederiksen becomes Denmark's youngest-ever prime minister", *CNN*, 26.06.2019, available at

<https://edition.cnn.com/2019/06/26/europe/mette-frederiksen-denmark-pm-intl/index.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁶⁵ Jennifer Rankin, "This article is more than 3 months old Belgium gets first female PM as Sophie Wilmès takes office", *The Guardian*, 20.10.2019, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/oct/28/belgium-first-female-pm-sophie-wilmes>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁶⁶ Megan SPECIA, "Who Is Sanna Marin, Finland's 34-Year-Old Prime Minister?", *The New York Times*, 10.12.2019, available at

<https://www.nytimes.com/2019/12/10/world/europe/finland-sanna-marin.html>, accessed on 20.10.2020.

⁶⁷ Teodora Marinescu, "Premiere in Greece. Katerina Sakellaropoulou, elected first female President in country's history", *Mediafax*, 22.01.2020, available at <https://www.mediafax.ro/externe/premiera-in-grecia-katerina-sakellaropoulou-aleasa-prima-femeie-presedinte-din-istoria-tarii-18737350>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁶⁸ ***, "Ursula von der Leyen, first female head of European Commission", *Deutsche Welle*, 16.07.2019, available at <https://www.dw.com/ro/ursula-von-der-leyen-prima-femeie-%C3%AEn-fruntea-comisiei-europene/a-49612624>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁶⁹ ***, "The Commissioners College (2019-2024)", *European Commission*, available at https://ec.europa.eu/commission/commissioners/2019-2024_en, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁷⁰ ***, "The Juncker Commission: A strong and experienced team standing for change", *European Commission*, 10.09.2014, available at

https://ec.europa.eu/commission/presscorner/detail/en/IP_14_984, accessed on 20.01.2020.

EU level, there is a policy to promote gender equality in decision making, an initiative that is promoted and implemented by the European Commission⁷¹. The aim is to reduce the gender gap at European level in decision making⁷². During 2014-2019, Lithuania, Latvia, Estonia, Malta, Croatia, Poland, Great Britain, Germany, Romania, Slovakia, Austria, Belgium and Finland, 12 of the 28 Member States of the European Union had women as head of state or in government positions. In some states, women wrote history being the first to succeed in accessing such positions. Although we do not see this openness in countries where the level of democratization is incipient or even lacking, such as Iraq, Iran, North Korea, Syria or Saudi Arabia, where the role of women is much lower than in western states, there are exceptions, such as Qatar, the Hashemite Kingdom of Jordan, Lebanon, etc. Sheikha Moza bint Nasser, is the wife of the former Emir of the State of Qatar and the mother of the current Emir, Sheikh Tamim bin Hamad bin Khalifa Al Thani. Since 1995, Sheikha Moza has initiated and led social and education reforms. Sheikha Moza co-founded and chairs the Qatar Foundation for Community Education, Science and Development (QF), established in 1995. She has also served as President of Silatech since 2008, President of the Foundation for Arab Democracy and President of the Supreme Council for Family Affairs since 1998. She is Vice-President of the Supreme Council for Education since 2002 and was UNESCO's special envoy for primary and higher education in 2003. She is currently a member of the Supervisory Board for Weill Cornell Medical College. She is the president of the Center for Medical Research and Sidra, a high-tech women's and children's hospital in Doha, a medical center that she has endowed with \$ 7.9 billion. Unlike many other monarchical wives in the Middle East, Sheikha Moza has been a major figure in national and regional politics and society, actively involved in the government of Qatar. She was a driving force behind Al Jazeera's education and children's channel. In addition, she was named one of Forbes' 100 strongest women at number 75.

Rania Al Abdullah is the current Queen of Jordan as wife of King Abdullah II of Jordan. Queen Rania used her position to advocate for various sectors of Jordanian society and beyond. In November 2000, in recognition of her commitment to the cause of children and young people, UNICEF invited her to join the global leadership initiative. Queen Rania has worked with other world leaders, including former South African President Nelson Mandela, in a global movement to improve children's

⁷¹ ***, "Gender balance in decision-making", *European Commission*, available at https://ec.europa.eu/info/policies/justice-and-fundamental-rights/gender-equality/gender-balance-decision-making-positions_en, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁷² *Ibidem*.

well-being. In January 2007, Queen Rania was named the first child advocate of UNICEF. In August 2009, Queen Rania became world honorary president of the United Nations Initiative for the Education of Girls (UNGEI).

Conclusions

Democracy as well as feminist movements have played an essential role in strengthening their role in society and in the state's governing structures. This led to a great participation of women in the public sphere. During 2014-2019 at the level of the European Union and at the level of the Member States, the number of women holding high-level positions increased significantly. Thus, we see a strengthening of the role of women at European level, the presence of women in the position of Prime Minister, President, President of the European Commission, High Representative of the European Union for Foreign Affairs and Security Policy, but also other positions, offers a strong example at international level regarding the capacity and competences of women in management positions. By holding such positions, they were able to directly influence the foreign policy decisions of the Member States and of the European Union. In this way, during the aforementioned period, women set their sights and imposed their vision on the foreign affairs of the European Union, Lithuania, Latvia, Malta, Poland, Croatia, Great Britain, Germany, Estonia, Romania, Slovakia, Austria, Belgium and Finland. The large number of women in management positions both at European Union level and at state level provides a strong example for other countries where women still face major obstacles in their path to leadership positions. This is especially the case in the Middle East. Middle East dictatorial regimes have suppressed human rights and gender equality is still a taboo subject. When there were transitions, the early democracies appeared and the free elections brought Islamist parties to the lead⁷³. They promoted religious populism and acted against human and women's rights. This happened in Iraq after Saddam Hussein's departure but also in Egypt after Hosni Mubarak's removal. Where reforms have been made, they have faced great opposition from conservative Islamist parties⁷⁴.

In terms of gender equality, the Middle East states, in particular Saudi Arabia and Iran, must make significant progress until they reach the standards of the states within the European Union. At this moment, the gap is about 50-100 years in terms of women's rights but little steps are

⁷³ Sami Zubaida, "Women, Democracy and Dictatorship in the Context of the Arab Uprisings", in F. Gerges (Ed.), *The New Middle East: Protest and Revolution in the Arab World*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2013, p.209.

⁷⁴ *Ibidem*. p.210.

taken to strengthen their role at the decision-making level, especially in the field of foreign policy. In 2009, Mahmoud Ahmadinejad, the President of Iran has since named the first woman minister in the country's history⁷⁵. At the February 2016 parliamentary elections in Iran, 17 women were elected to parliament⁷⁶. A historical figure given the fact that since the Islamic revolution in 1979, not so many women have been elected to parliament. Of the 290 parliamentarians, 17 are women, about 6%, a percentage that remains a very small one⁷⁷. Hassan Rouhani's successor to President Ahmadinejad has called for a greater role for women in public administration. In 2015, he first appointed a woman as ambassador of Malaysia for the first time since 1979⁷⁸. However, in Iran, women cannot travel abroad without their husband's consent and are legally required to wear a hijab⁷⁹. These are just a few of the problems women face in Iran.

Instead, Saudi Arabia has also begun to take small steps in terms of gender equality and respect for human rights. As of August 2018, women are allowed to go to the stadium for football games⁸⁰. In February 2019, Saudi Arabia named the first woman to serve as ambassador in the United States⁸¹. Starting with July 2019, women are allowed to hold a driving license⁸². As of August 2019, women no longer need their spouse's permission to travel abroad and can apply for a marriage, divorce or birth

⁷⁵ Matt Mcallester, "Iran Appoints First Female Ambassador since 1979 Islamic Revolution", *Newsweek*, 11.09.2015, available at <https://www.newsweek.com/iran-female-ambassador-336255>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁷⁶ Susanna Capelouto, "Experts: More Women in Iran's parliament signals shift in society", *CNN*, 02.05.2016, available at

<https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/02/middleeast/iran-women-parliament/index.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁷⁷ *Ibidem*.

⁷⁸ Matt Mcallester, "Iran Appoints First Female Ambassador since 1979 Islamic Revolution", *Newsweek*, 11.09.2015, available at <https://www.newsweek.com/iran-female-ambassador-336255>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁷⁹ ***, "Iranian women - before and after the Islamic Revolution", *BBC*, 08.02.2019, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-47032829>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁸⁰ ***, "Saudi Arabia allows women at football game for first time", *BBC*, 18.01.2018, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-42668841>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

⁸¹ ***, "Saudi Arabia appoints its first female ambassador to US", *The Guardian*, 24.02.2019, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/feb/24/saudi-arabia-appoints-its-first-female-ambassador-to-us>, accessed on 31.01.2020.

⁸² Megan Specia, "Saudi Arabia Granted Women the Right to Drive. A Year on, It's Still Complicated", *The New York Times*, 24.05.2019, available at

<https://www.nytimes.com/2019/06/24/world/middleeast/saudi-driving-ban-anniversary.html>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

certificate⁸³. However, Saudi women have to wear jilbab and abaya and face many problems in terms of gender equality and human rights in the continents. In this regard, the European Union and the Member States are a good example to follow. To convey a message to this effect, Theresa May went on an official visit to Saudi Arabia without a veil covering her hair⁸⁴. During her visit to Saudi Arabia on April 30, 2017, Angela Merkel did not wear a veil⁸⁵. Through this gesture, the two leaders wanted to convey a message of support for the rights of women in the Kingdom.

References

Cioculescu, Șerban Filip, (2007), *Introduction in the Theory of International Relations*, Bucharest. Military Publishing House.

Cohn, Carol, (1993), *War, Wimps, and Women: Talking gender and thinking war*, in Miriam Cooke and Angela Woollacoot (eds.), *Gendering War Talk*, Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press.

Enloe, Cynthia, (2000), *Bananas, Beaches and Bases: Making Feminist Sense of International Politics*, California, University of California Press.

Farndom, John, (2012), *50 genius ideas*, Bucharest, Litera Publishing House.

Fukuyama, Francis, (2006), *America at the Crossroads: Democracy, Power, and the Neoconservative Legacy*, translated by Andreea and Nicolae Năstase, Antet XX Press, Prahova.

Ivan, Ruxandra, (2013), *Critical Theory*, in Eugen Huzum (coord.), *Political theories and ideologies*, Iasi, European Institute Publishing House.

Jeffreys-Jone, Rhodri, (1995), *Changing Differences: Women and the Shaping of American Foreign Policy, 1917-1994*, New Brunswick, N.J., Rutgers University Press.

⁸³ Emma Graham-Harrison, "Saudi Arabia allows women to travel without male guardian's approval", *The Guardian*, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/aug/01/saudi-women-can-now-travel-without-a-male-guardian-reports-say>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁸⁴ Joe Watts, "Theresa May arrives in Saudi Arabia without headscarf in rejection of dress code for women", *The Independent*, 04.04.2017, available at <https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/theresa-may-saudi-arabia-hair-no-headscarf-pm-rejects-dress-code-women-a7666016.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

⁸⁵ Samuel Osborne, "Angela Merkel arrives without headscarf in Saudi Arabia for talks with King Salman", *The Independent*, 30.04.2017, available at <https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/europe/angela-merkel-headscarf-saudi-arabia-king-salman-refugees-a7710476.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Miroiu, Mihaela, (2004), *The road towards autonomy; feminist political theories*, Iasi, Polirom Publishing House.

Tickner, Ann, (2006), "On the Frontlines or Sidelines of Knowledge and Power? Feminist Practices of Responsible Scholarship", *International Studies Review*, vol. 8, No. 3.

Tickner, Ann, (1997), "You Just Don't Understand: Troubled Engagements between Feminists and IR Theorists", in *International Studies Quarterly*, Vol. 41, No. 4, 1997.

True, Jaqui, (2008), *Feminism*, in Scott BURCHILL (et all), *Theories of International Relations*, translated by Ruxandra Ivan, Iasi, European Institute Publishing House.

Zubaida, Sami, (2013), "Women, Democracy and Dictatorship in the Context of the Arab Uprisings", in F. Gerges (Ed.), *The New Middle East: Protest and Revolution in the Arab World*, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.

Scientific articles and newspaper articles:

***, "Austria appoints Brigitte Bierlein as its first female chancellor", *The Guardian*, 30.05.2019, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/may/30/austria-appoints-brigitte-bierlein-as-its-first-female-chancellor-sebastian-kurz>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "Christine Lagarde resigns as head of IMFth", *BBC*, 16.07.2019, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/business-49009226>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

***, "Democracy Index 2019: A year of democratic setbacks and popular protest", *The Economist Intelligence Unit*, available at www.eiu.com/Handlers/WhitepaperHandler.ashx?fi=Democracy-Index-2019.pdf&mode=wp&campaignid=democracyindex2019, accessed on 10.01.2020.

***, "Estonia parliament votes for first female president", *The Guardian*, 03.10.2016, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/oct/03/estonia-first-female-president-kersti-kaljulaid>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "Gender balance in decision-making", *European Commission*, available at https://ec.europa.eu/info/policies/justice-and-fundamental-rights/gender-equality/gender-balance-decision-making-positions_en, accessed on 10.01.2020.

***, "Gender balance in decision-making", *European Commission*, available at <https://ec.europa.eu/info/policies/justice-and-fundamental->

rights/gender-equality/gender-balance-decision-making-positions_en, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "German election: Merkel wins fourth term, AfD nationalists rise", *BBC*, 25.09.2017, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-41376577>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "Grabar-Kitarovic elected Croatia's first woman president", *BBC*, 12.01.2015, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-30765822>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "Iranian women - before and after the Islamic Revolution", *BBC*, 08.02.2019, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-47032829>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

***, "Lithuania's Dalia Grybauskaite wins re-election after run-off", *BBC*, 25.05.2014, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-27571609>, accessed on 05.01.2020.

***, "Poland: Mateusz Morawiecki to replace Beata Szydlo as prime minister", *Deutsche Welle*, 07.12.2017, available at

<https://www.dw.com/en/poland-mateusz-morawiecki-to-replace-beata-szydlo-as-prime-minister/a-41704817>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "Presidents of Malta, Ms. Marie-Louise Coleiro Preca", Malta Government Website, available at

<https://www.gov.mt/en/Government/Government%20of%20Malta/Presidents%20of%20Malta/Pages/Marie-Louise-Coleiro-Preca.aspx>, accessed on 12.01.2020.

***, "Saudi Arabia allows women at football game for first time", *BBC*, 18.01.2018, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-42668841>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

***, "Saudi Arabia appoints its first female ambassador to US", *The Guardian*, 24.02.2019, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/feb/24/saudi-arabia-appoints-its-first-female-ambassador-to-us>, accessed on 31.01.2020.

***, "The Commissioners College (2019-2024)", *European Commission*, available at

https://ec.europa.eu/commission/commissioners/2019-2024_en, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "The Juncker Commission: A strong and experienced team standing for change", *European Commission*, 10.09.2014, available at https://ec.europa.eu/commission/presscorner/detail/en/IP_14_984, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "The World's 100 Most Powerful Women", *Forbes*, 10.12.2015, available at <http://www.forbes.com/power-women/list/#tab:overall>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

***, "Tsai Ing-wen elected Taiwan's first female president", *BBC*, 17.01.2016, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-asia-35333647>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

***, "Ursula von der Leyen, first female head of European Commission", *Deutsche Welle*, 16.07.2019, available at <https://www.dw.com/ro/ursula-von-der-leyen-prima-femeie-%C3%AEn-fruntea-comisiei-europene/a-49612624>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

***, "Women in the European Parliament (infographics)", *European Parliament*, 12.09.2019, available at <https://www.europarl.europa.eu/news/en/headlines/society/20190226STO28804/women-in-the-european-parliament-infographics>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Amaro, Silvia, "ECB chief Christine Lagarde speaks of a new order in the world economy at debut speech", *CNBC*, available at <https://www.cnbc.com/2019/11/22/christine-lagarde-first-speech-as-european-central-bank-president.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Anghel, Iulian, "The first female Prime-minister in the Romanian history", *Financial Newspaper*, 17.01.2018, available at <https://www.zf.ro/eveniment/prima-femeie-prim-ministru-din-istoria-romaniei-16930172>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Britton, Bianca, "Mette Frederiksen becomes Denmark's youngest-ever prime minister", *CNN*, 26.06.2019, available at <https://edition.cnn.com/2019/06/26/europe/mette-frederiksen-denmark-pm-intl/index.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Capelouto, Susanna, "Experts: More Women in Iran's parliament signals shift in society", *CNN*, 02.05.2016, available at <https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/02/middleeast/iran-women-parliament/index.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Vincenti, Daniela, "Profile: Federica Mogherini, the next EU foreign affairs chief", *Euractiv*, 31.08.2014, available at <https://www.euractiv.com/section/global-europe/news/profile-federica-mogherini-the-next-eu-foreign-affairs-chief/>, accessed on 20.10.2020.

Ford, Tamasin, "Ellen Johnson Sirleaf: The legacy of Africa's first elected female president", *BBC*, 22.01.2018, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-africa-42748769>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Gorman, Sophie, "Chile's first female president Michelle Bachelet will rise to human rights mission", *France 24*, 10.08.2018, available at <https://www.france24.com/en/20180810-chile-first-female-president-michelle-bachelet-rise-human-rights-challenge>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Graham-Harrison, Emma, "Saudi Arabia allows women to travel without male guardian's approval", *The Guardian*, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/aug/01/saudi-women-can-now-travel-without-a-male-guardian-reports-say>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Grubel James, "Australia gets first woman PM", *Reuters*, 24.06.2010, available at

<https://www.reuters.com/article/us-australia-politics/australia-gets-first-woman-pm-idUSTRE65N00120100624>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Healy, Patrick, Martin, Jonathan, "Democrats Make Hillary Clinton a Historic Nominee", *The New York Times*, 26.07.2016, available at <https://www.nytimes.com/2016/07/27/us/politics/dnc-speakers-sanders-clinton.html>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Holmes, Oliver, "Aung San Suu Kyi set to get PM-type role in Myanmar government", *The Guardian*, 01.04.2016, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/apr/01/aung-san-suu-kyi-set-to-get-pm-type-role-in-myanmar-government>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Kroet, Cynthia, "Laimdota Straujuma: Latvia's prime minister", *Politico*, 18.12.2014, available at <https://www.politico.eu/article/laimdota-straujuma-latvias-prime-minister/>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Lupitu, Robert, "Angela Merkel became today the second most longevive chancellor in the history of Federal Republic of Germany", *Calea Europeana*, 22.12.2019, available at

<https://www.caleaeuropeana.ro/angela-merkel-a-devenit-astazi-al-doilea-cel-mai-longeviv-cancelar-din-istoria-republicii-federale-germania/>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Marinescu, Teodora, "Premiere in Greece. Katerina Sakellaropoulou, elected first female President in country's history", *Mediafax*, 22.01.2020, available at <https://www.mediafax.ro/externe/premiera-in-grecia-katerina-sakellaropoulou-aleasa-prima-femeie-presedinte-din-istoria-tarii-18737350>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

McAllester, Matt, "Iran Appoints First Female Ambassador since 1979 Islamic Revolution", *Newsweek*, 11.09.2015, available at

<https://www.newsweek.com/iran-female-ambassador-336255>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Osborne, Samuel, "Angela Merkel arrives without headscarf in Saudi Arabia for talks with King Salman", *The Independent*, 30.04.2017, available at <https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/europe/angela-merkel-headscarf-saudi-arabia-king-salman-refugees-a7710476.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Rankin, Jennifer, "This article is more than 3 months old Belgium gets first female PM as Sophie Wilmès takes office", *The Guardian*, 20.10.2019,

available at <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/oct/28/belgium-first-female-pm-sophie-wilmes>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Sobczyk, Marcin, Wasilewski “Patryk, Poland's Prime Minister Names New Cabinet, *The Wall Street Journal*, available at

<https://www.wsj.com/articles/polands-prime-minister-names-new-cabinet-1411117860>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Specia, Megan, “Saudi Arabia Granted Women the Right to Drive. A Year on, It's Still Complicated”, *The New York Times*, 24.05.2019, available at

<https://www.nytimes.com/2019/06/24/world/middleeast/saudi-driving-ban-anniversary.html>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Specia, Megan, “Who Is Sanna Marin, Finland's 34-Year-Old Prime Minister?”, *The New York Times*, 10.12.2019, available at

<https://www.nytimes.com/2019/12/10/world/europe/finland-sanna-marin.html>, accessed on 20.10.2020.

Stamp, Gavin, “Who is Theresa May: A profile of UK's new prime minister”, *BBC*, 25.07.2016, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-politics-36660372>, accessed on 05.01.2020.

Vick, Karl, “Berlin with Simon Shuster”, *Time*, 10.12.2015, available at <http://time.com/time-person-of-the-year-2015-angela-merkel/>, accessed on 10.01.2020.

Walker, Shaun, “Slovakia's first female president hails victory for progressive values”, *The Guardian*, 31.03.2019, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/mar/31/slovakia-elects-zuzana-caputova-first-female-president>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

Watts, Joe, “Theresa May arrives in Saudi Arabia without headscarf in rejection of dress code for women”, *The Independent*, 04.04.2017, available at <https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/theresa-may-saudi-arabia-hair-no-headscarf-pm-rejects-dress-code-women-a7666016.html>, accessed on 20.01.2020.

THE SPECIFIC OF "CONTRAVENTION FINES" IN THE LEGAL REGULATION OF THE LEGISLATION OF THE REPUBLIC OF MOLDOVA AND ROMANIA - ELEMENTS OF COMPARATIVE LAW

Oleg Pantea*

panteaoleg@gmail.com

Abstract: *The published material reveals clear information about the application by the empowered body of the state of the contravention sanction - the fine, as a pecuniary punishment, approached through the legislation of the Republic of Moldova and Romania - comparative aspect. The proposed study highlights the particularities and conditions of the application of the contravention fine, considering the degree of social danger regarding the committed action, the circumstances of the commission of the action and the personal circumstances of the contravener. At the same time, were approached the exceptions of unconstitutionality in both states regarding contravention provisions. An important section of the study was dedicated to the effects concerning the failure to pay the fine.*

Keywords: *contravention, contravention fine, contravention sanctions, individuals, official examiner.*

The application of the contravention sanction is the second phase of the contravention procedure. The contravention sanction is applied to reestablish the social relations that have been affected after the commission of the contravention, but also to resocialize the contravener, the last one is meant to support the action of statal constraint. The contravention sanctions generally have significant particularities from one legal system to another. Probably the contravention matter remains, however, one of the areas in which we most often encounter regulations composed of elements of a different nature. Therefore, the subject proposed for the research, which at first sight seems to be quite narrow - the specific of the contravention fine in the regulation of the legislation of the Republic of Moldova and of Romania - has a theoretical-practical interest as this is the most frequently applied sanction by the state authorities, but also to identify its specific particularities for each state, analyzing the existing legal framework.

*PhD., associate professor, Moldova State University.

The framework that regulates the contravention fine in the Republic of Moldova is the Contravention Code of 24.10.2008 (hereinafter CC), and in Romania by the Government Ordinance no.2 of 12.07.2001 is approved the legal regime of contraventions (Government Ordinance no.2).

Therefore, according to article 34 of the CC, the fine is a pecuniary contravention sanction, evaluated in conventional units and which consists in "obliging the contravener to pay a sum of money"¹. The fine is considered the most widespread and most effective contravention sanction. It is a sanction that affects the contravener by diminishing its patrimony, which consists in the forced taking of a sum of money from the contravener's patrimony and its passage into the patrimony of the state or the administrative-territorial units. ² The size of a conventional unit in the Republic of Moldova is 50 lei. From the beginning the size was 20 lei, and with the changes that have intervened in the economy and finances, but also due to the lack of efficiency of the sanctions with small fines applied, all this has determined Moldovan authorities in 2017 to change the size of the conventional unit, from 20 to 50 lei. The modifications made were based on the following calculation formula: the average of a monthly salary per economy forecast for the year 2016 was 5050 lei. Thus, 1% of 5050 lei, as it was desired to be the new value of the conventional unit, constituted 50 lei and 50 bani.

Speaking about the Romanian legislation, this refers, generically, to the legal character of the contravention fine. In art.8 par.(1) of the Government Ordinance no.2 is provided: "The contravention fine has an administrative character".³ We note here that, the legislator himself identifies the administrative nature of the fine, probably because it is always applied by the administrative bodies of the state. The unit of measure of the contravention fine in Romania is "lei".

The amount of the contravention fine is determined by the degree of social danger of the act, by the contravener's guilt and must be within the limits provided by law. In art.34 par. (2) and (3) CC, it is determined the amount of the fine that can be applied to individuals and legal entities. For individuals from 1 to 500 conventional units, and for the persons with responsibility function - from 10 to 1500 conventional units.⁴ Considering

¹ The Contravention Code of the Republic of Moldova from 24.10.2008. In: Official Monitor no. 3-6 of 16.01.2009, republished in the Official Monitor No. 78-84 of 17.03.2017.

² Secula Mihai-R. Contravention procedure. Course support. Bucharest, 2002, page 17.

³ Ordinance of Romania no.2 of 12.07.2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions. In: The Official Monitor No.410 of 25.07.2001.

⁴ The Contravention Code of the Republic of Moldova from 24.10.2008. In: Official Monitor no. 3-6 of 16.01.2009, republished in the Official Monitor No.78-84 of 17.03.2017.

the principle of individualizing the contravention sanction and the limits of the fine set by the legislator, the official examiner or the authorized person will determine the amount of the fine applied depending on the degree of danger and the contravener's guilt. For the repeated commission of the contravention, within a year, by a legal entity, the fine is double from the amount of the fine in the value of the maximum limit indicated by the law. And, for committing the contravention by the legal person for the third time and more, during one year, the person is sanctioned with a triple fine from the amount of the fine in the value of the maximum limit indicated.⁵

In Romania, the amount of the contravention fines is much higher, being determined by law the minimum and maximum limits, according to the normative act that establishes the fine. Thus, the minimum limit of the fine is 25 lei, and the maximum limit cannot exceed:

a) 100,000 lei, in case of contraventions established by law and ordinance;

b) 50,000 lei, in case of contraventions established by Government decisions;

c) 5,000 lei, in the case of contraventions established by decisions of the county councils or of the General Council of Bucharest Municipality;

d) 2,500 lei, in the case of contraventions established in decisions of the local councils of the communes, cities, municipalities and sectors of the municipality of Bucharest.⁶

The sanction of the fine is applied within the limits provided and must be proportional to the degree of social danger of the act committed, taking into account the circumstances in which the deed was committed, the manner and means of committing it, the purpose pursued, the result produced, as well as the personal circumstances of the contravener and other data entered in protocol.

The term of payment of the fine in the Republic of Moldova is 30 days from the date of its establishment. Previously, if the contravener paid his fine within 72 hours from the moment the deed was established, he was entitled to pay half of it. In correlation with this norm, the Constitutional Court of the Republic of Moldova came with a Decision regarding the constitutionality of the text "from the moment of its establishment". The court found that, there is discrimination that is not objectively and reasonably justified among the people who can pay half a fine, because

⁵ The Contravention Code of the Republic of Moldova from 24.10.2008. In: Official Monitor no. 3-6 of 16.01.2009, republished in the Official Monitor No.78-84 of 17.03.2017.

⁶ Ordinance of Romania no.2 of 12.07.2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions. In: The Official Monitor No.410 of 25.07.2001.

some people receive in due time the copy of the protocol of committing a contravention, through the postal services and there are other people who receive the copy of the protocol with delay, and they cannot realize their right effectively to pay the fine in half. But, the contraventional law does not provide a mechanism that would allow sufficient remediation of the obstacles arising from the effective exercise by the contravener of his right to pay half of the fine established. Thus, the Court decided that until the law was amended by the Parliament, "the 72-hour time limit for payment half of the fine will run from the moment the contravener is notified regarding the setting of the fine".⁷

In the same context, on 12.10.2018 the Parliament of the Republic of Moldova adopted amendments to the Contravention Code, by which the 72-hour duration was replaced by "three working days from the date of notifying the decision to apply the sanction". In this case, the sanction of the fine is considered to be fully executed, except the case when the sanctioning decision has been challenged and the contravener has not withdrawn his request to challenge the decision issued in a contravention case until the judicial inquiry. The period offered will be synchronized with the working hours of the institutions responsible for receiving the fine.⁸ Given the experience of the Government in recent years to declare several days in a row as non-working or rest days, the probability that the contravener will pay a half of the fine within the established 72-hours was minimized. Through these changes was guaranteed the right to a fair trial by ensuring the real right to pay a half of the fine, even if the protocol was challenged in court and the contravener did not withdraw his request to challenge the decision, issued on the contravention case until the judicial inquiry. If the contravener did not comply with the conditions or the request was rejected, the amount of the fine will be paid fully.

With reference to the same problem in Romania, the established term in which the contravener can pay a half of the fine is much wider. The art.28, Government Ordinance no.2 states that "the contravener may pay, within no more than 15 days from the date of receiving or communicating the protocol, a half of the minimum fine provided by the normative act, mention made about this opportunity by the official examiner in the

⁷ The decision of the Constitutional Court no. 7 of 26.04.2018 regarding the exception of unconstitutionality of the article 34 par. (3) of the Contravention Code. In: Official Monitor no. 176-180 of 01.06.2018.

⁸ Informative note of the Ministry of Justice of the Republic of Moldova to the draft Law on the modification of the Contravention Code of the Republic of Moldova no.218-XVI of 24.10.2008.

[Online]http://www.justice.gov.md/public/files/2018/transparenta_in_procesul_de_cezional/martie/27/1/NF_COD_CONT.pdf, accessed on 23.11.2018.

protocol".⁹ We consider that it is sufficient, up to 15 days, for the contravener to execute his obligations, which result from the application of the sanction. It would be illogical to restrict the term, insofar as the state has the interest to restore the social relations affected, to re-socialize the contravener and to determine him to pay the fine established. Until 2018¹⁰, the deadline was much restraint, 48 hours, and the legislator specified the start of the deadline (midnight the next day) and the end of the term (on a legal holiday or when the service was suspended was extended until the end the next working day).

An issue that cannot be overlooked represents the consequences of not paying the fine. Thus, art.34 para. (4) of the CC establishes the effects for non-payment of the fine due to the lack or insufficiency of the goods or due to the malevolence avoidance of the contravener from its payment. In this case the court can replace the unpaid amount of the fine with:

- fine in double size, which cannot exceed the maximum limit of the sanction with the fine provided by the contraventional material norm;
- deprivation of the right to carry out a certain activity for a term from 6 months to one year;
- unpaid work for the benefit of the community, calculating one hour of work for a conventional unit, the working time being of maximum 60 hours;
- contraventional arrest, calculating an arrest day for 2 conventional units, the duration of the arrest being of maximum 30 days, taking into account the rules of the arrest application;
- for traffic offenses the fine may be replaced by deprivation of the right to drive vehicles from 6 months to one year.

The fine is replaced by the court of the territorial area in which is located the authority from which takes part the official agent who examined the case, at his request or at the request of the prosecutor who examined the case.¹¹

In this respect, there are some subtleties regarding the non-payment of the fine under the above conditions. First of all, it must be demonstrated that it is impossible to execute the case by the executor, this means that is impossible to collect the amount of the fine by the actions ordered: blocking the amount on the salary card, seizures on goods, others.

⁹ Ordinance of Romania no.2 of 12.07.2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions. In: The Official Monitor No.410 of 25.07.2001.

¹⁰ The Law of Romania no. 203/2018 regarding measures to make the payment of fines more efficient. In: Official Monitor no.647 of 25.07.2018.

¹¹ The Contravention Code of the Republic of Moldova from 24.10.2008. In: Official Monitor no. 3-6 of 16.01.2009, republished in the Official Monitor No.78-84 of 17.03.2017.

Then, the replacement of the fine with the unpaid work for the benefit of the community can only take place if the contravener has expressed his agreement in writing to execute this form of sanction. In the absence of the contravener's agreement, the court will not be able to apply the replacement of the contravention sanction.

With regard to the contraventional arrest, a day of arrest for two conventional units (100 lei), the court usually does not apply these provisions, because detaining a person would cost about 198 lei per day today (expenses for communal services, alimentation, salaries of the civil servants who provide supervision and guard) and respectively, it makes no sense to detain a person in custody for 100 lei daily, spending from the budget for this almost double.

Analyzing the Romanian legislation in this respect, we find in art.391 of Government Ordinance no.2 that, if the contravener has not paid the fine within 30 days from the definitive stay of the sanction and there is no possibility of enforced execution, he will notify the court in the constituency to which the contravention was committed, in order to replace the fine with the sanction of performing an activity for the benefit of the community, taking into account, as the case may be, about the part of the fine that was paid. If the contravener, summoned by the court, did not pay the fine within 30 days, the court proceeds to replace the fine with the sanction of performing an activity for the benefit of the community for a maximum duration of 50 hours, and for juveniles from 16 years about 25 hours¹². The contraventional prison as a sanction has been abolished in Romania since 2003¹³.

In the previous legal provisions (art.9 Government Ordinance no.2), the application of the sanction for the benefit of the community was conditioned by the consent of the contravener, a mandatory condition, which had the effect of exempting it from any sanction, in the case that it had no income that could be tracked. Under the conditions shown, the state was practically devoid of the compulsory power through which it ensures the observance of the law, respectively it was inefficient and the sanction applied for committing an antisocial act. The problem was solved by the decision of the Constitutional Court of Romania no.354 of 10.12.2008¹⁴, which found that the phrase "with its agreement" from the

¹² Ordinance of Romania no.2 of 12.07.2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions. In: The Official Monitor No.410 of 25.07.2001.

¹³ Emergency Ordinance of Romania no.108 of 24.10.2003 for the abolition of the contraventional prison. In: Official Monitor no.747 of 26.10.2003.

¹⁴ The decision of the Constitutional Court of Romania no.1.354 of 10.12.2008 regarding the admission of the exception of unconstitutionality of the provisions of art. 9 paragraph (5) of the Government Ordinance no. 2/2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions, as well as art. 1 paragraph (3), art. 8 paragraph (5) b) and art. 13 of the

art.9, of the Government Ordinance no.2/2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions, is unconstitutional.

From the beginning of the establishment of contravention sanctions until today, the legal regulations regarding the "fine" have been dynamic in terms of methods / procedures of application. It has been constantly maintained in the general system of sanctions applied by authorities for contravention acts, which damage the social values and social relations protected by the law. The fine consists of the amount of money that the contravener is obliged to pay to the state. It is part of the whole set of measures, with the use of state power, and if necessary against the will of the people, to prevent the committing of anti-social facts and to protect the rights and freedoms of the people.

The evolution of people cannot really be conceived outside the assurance of social order, law, peace, public order and public security, basic attributes of any human community.

References

The decision of the Constitutional Court no.7 of 26.04.2018 regarding the exception of unconstitutionality of the article 34 par. (3) of the Contravention Code. In: Official Monitor No. 176-180 of 01.06.2018.

The decision of the Constitutional Court of Romania no.1.354 of 10.12.2008 regarding the admission of the exception of unconstitutionality of the provisions of art. 9 paragraph (5) of the Government Ordinance no. 2/2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions, as well as art. 1 paragraph (3), art. 8 paragraph (5) b) and art. 13 of the Government Ordinance no. 55/2002 regarding the legal regime of the sanction of the provision of an activity for the benefit of the community, as amended by the Government Emergency Ordinance no. 108/2003 regarding the abolition of the contraventional prison. In: The Official Monitor of Romania no. 887 of 29.12.2008.

The Contravention Code of the Republic of Moldova from 24.10.2008. In: Official Monitor no. 3-6 of 16.01.2009, republished in the Official Monitor No. 78-84 of 17.03.2017.

Ordinance of Romania no.2 of 12.07.2001 regarding the legal regime of contraventions. In: The Official Monitor No.410 of 25.07.2001.

Government Ordinance no. 55/2002 regarding the legal regime of the sanction of the provision of an activity for the benefit of the community, as amended by the Government Emergency Ordinance no. 108/2003 regarding the abolition of the contraventional prison. In: The Official Monitor of Romania no. 887 of 29.12.2008.

Emergency Ordinance of Romania no.108 of 24.10.2003 for the abolition of the contraventional prison. In: Official Monitor no.747 of 26.10.2003.

The Law of Romania no. 203/2018 regarding measures to make the payment of fines more efficient. In: Official Monitor no.647 of 25.07.2018.

Informative note of the Ministry of Justice of the Republic of Moldova to the draft Law on the modification of the Contravention Code of the Republic of Moldova no.218-XVI of 24.10.2008. [Online]

http://www.justice.gov.md/public/files/2018/transparenta_in_procesul_decizional/martie/27/1/NF_COD_CONT.pdf, accessed on 27.09.2019.

Secula, Mihai-R., (2002), *Contravention procedure. Course support*. Bucharest.

THE WORLD PRACTICE OF GOVERNMENTS SUPPORT THE SMALL BUSINESS: LESSONS FOR UKRAINE

Olha Pavlykivska,*

olga.i.pavl@gmail.com

Lesia Marushchak,**

lesyamar@ukr.net

Kilyar Oleksandra***

kilaroleksandra@gmail.com

Abstract: *The preference of the research is conditioned by the necessity to analyze the development of small business as the indicator of the development countries' economies around the world. As well Ukraine belongs to countries where small and medium sized business is very important for economic development because it shows the socio-economic level of the country in general and contributes to strength its financial position. The article contains the analysis of the small business development result in several countries to show the necessity of government support this sector in Ukraine. The main reason is the interconnection between financial volume of the small business and the budget revenues of Ukraine.*

Keywords: *small business, government support, practice, entrepreneurship, research and development opportunities.*

Introduction

It is very hard to underestimate the role of small business in economic development of each country. Only the governments of high-developed countries have possibility to make a remark on the development to big-sized companies and mustn't pay attention to small companies because

* Department of the accounting and audit, Ternopil Ivan Puluj National Technical University, Ukraine.

** Department of the accounting and audit, Ternopil Ivan Puluj National Technical University, Ukraine.

*** Department of the accounting and audit, Ternopil Ivan Puluj National Technical University, Ukraine.

they are the main source of the state budget profits as pay a huge volume of taxes. But countries with developing economies need to support small business developing process. It isn't easy task as requires many measure and governing control. We have negative tendency in small business environment through more than 90% of entire Ukrainian business is represented by small entities and most of them are functioning only at zero profit or furl their activities. Governing support programs do not work well. And theoretical and practical researches are very important in this direction.

1. Literature Review

The first and the most important basics for research studying are legislative and normative acts of each of countries that regulate small business activity. The most available environment for doing small business is in New Zealand, the United States, the United Kingdom, Canada and Germany. III Jones¹ stressed that the most important measures for supporting development of small business could be divided into three groups: grants, finance and loans; business support – mentoring and consultancy and funding for small businesses and startups. There are many instructions and necessary literatures for running business in UK (2018)². Hon Stuart Nash, Minister for small business in New Zealand (May, 2018)³ indicated that small business is the backbone of the New Zealand economy. Small businesses are the driving force of New Zealand economy so considered Hon Jacqui Dean (2017)⁴. Canadian government elaborated some specific programs for small business supporting⁵. Such programs were established over 40 years ago (Act), their main purpose is to increase the availability of financing for establishing, expanding and modernizing small businesses. USA has relatively smaller share of small business if to compare with others countries. But USA has very flexible

¹ Jones, J., (2018), *A guide to government support for small businesses*. URL: <http://www.thepitch.uk/finance/government-support-for-small-businesses>

² Make business your business. A guide to a new business. Starting and developing. URL:

https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/32246/12-828-make-business-your-business-guide-to-starting.pdf

³ Nash, H.S., (2018), *New Zealand's Support for Small Business*. URL: <https://www.business.govt.nz/assets/Uploads/Documents/Small-business-booklet.pdf>

⁴ Dean, H.J., *New Zealand's Support for Small Business*. URL: <https://www.beehive.govt.nz/sites/default/files/2017-12/Small%20Business%20-%20Annex%20%20Small%20Business%20Brochure.pdf>

⁵ Innovation, science and economic development, Canada. URL: [https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/\\$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf](https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf)

system of programs for small business development. Ireland government not only helps to small business by different financing programs but support companies through national education and training system.

Ukrainian small business is characterized by very small development as only one of ten start-ups survives during its five years of existence. The main legislative documents that regulate small business in Ukraine are Law of Ukraine "About state support of small entrepreneurship" and Budget Code⁶. Small business is supported by different local programs.

2. World practice Review

New Zealand. This country takes first position in Doing business rank. Small businesses are the driving force of their economy, the share of small companies amounts 97% of all businesses in New Zealand, they contribute 26% of their total GDP, and create over 100,000 jobs annually and number of small companies is increasing constantly, only during last year small business increased at 13,122 entrepreneurs (table 1).

Table 1

Small business in New Zealand

	2017		2018	
Number of small companies	515,046		528,168	
Share in GDP	26%		A quarter of GDP	
Employment	29% of employees		29% of workforce	
Employees engagement	zero employees	362,856	zero employees	372,429
	1-5 employees	98,748	1-5 employees	100,590
	6-19 employees	38,340	6-19 employees	39,609
	20-49 employees	9,780	20-49 employees	10,029
	50+ employees	5,325	50+ employees	5,514

According to size, small business in New Zealand is considered firms with fewer than 20 employees. Small companies except supporting regional economic growth they supply larger exporting businesses. 25% of all small companies in NZ are exporters. If to compare with others countries where business environment is forming for all types of companies equally to different sizes, government of NZ tries to develop every segment of business separately. The major segments of business in many countries are shared by the big company-monopolists. But according

⁶ Budget Code of Ukraine (2010). URL: <http://zakon2.rada.gov.ua/laws/show/2456-17>

to NZ practice the main sector of economy is divided between the numbers of small business (fig. 1).

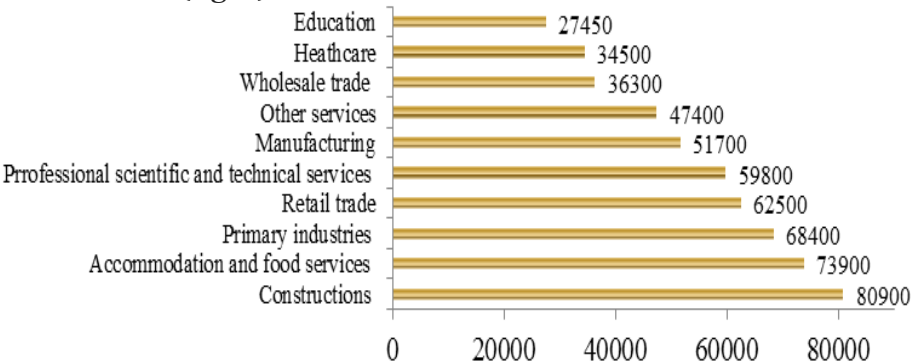


Figure 1. Numbers of small firms in New Zealand divided into segments, 2018

There are organized and functioning several organizations for supporting small business in different stages (table 2). Innovations and technologies are the main point stressed by government of New Zealand. There are two programmes which are working in this direction – Ultra-Fast Broadband (UFB) programme and Rural Broadband Initiative (RBI) whose aim is to provide 99% of New Zealanders receiving internet connection with speed of 50 Mbps or more by 2025. On one of government sites were worked out the special tools for facilitation the work in small business – “Employment Agreement Builder” which makes it easy to create legally compliant employment agreements and “Employee Cost Calculator” which gives you confidence to take on new staff by estimating the cost of hiring. And more than 2 million of entrepreneurs visit government sites to get information.

Table 2
Functioning organizations for supporting small business in different stages

Organizations	Mission
Business, govt. Nz	Advice, support, industry and connections and funding
ACC	Online help, advice for managing business process and tax advice
Stats NZ	Set of services to support employers and clients, access to recruitment service, organizing meeting with the right employees, access to business and customers data for better understanding industrial specialties
Callaghan innovation	Funding, programmes for innovation development

MFAT	Export and import issues
IPONZ	Help small companies to protect intellectual properties
Immigration NZ	Help with searching, hiring and inviting workers from overseas
NZTE	Help small business to grow and succeed in international markets by giving companies access to support, services and expertise

Government of New Zealand also developed a very flexible system of bank loans for small business. Banks issue the quick loans to small firms for different goals such as replacement machineries and inventories, payment tax bills and banks business finance loans are tailored for small business (table 2). Owners of small firms don't have to wait around for the lending officers to get approvals from their managers, who then have to get approval from the credit department, who after that have to get approval from the directors. The people owners speak to are the same ones lending them money – it's a very simple way to get fast loans for business necessities. So all owners of small business are assured in financial stability and their risk to become insolvent is minimized. Offers fix interest rates for the entire term of businessmen loans to add certainty to their business, so their repayments will not be chopping and change like are practicing by many lenders in other countries.

Table 3

Financial terms to provide loans for small business in New Zealand⁷

Weeks	Amounts, \$	Repayments of only per week, \$	Amounts, \$	Repayments of only per week, \$
12	1000	121,19	5000	465,46
24	1000	64,83	5000	242,12
36	1000	46,07	5000	167,76
48	1000	36,70	5000	130,64
60	1000	31,10	5000	108,43
72	1000	27,37	5000	93,66
84	1000	24,72	5000	83,16
96	1000	22,74	5000	75,31

A small business in New Zealand could be started after detailed analysis of the legal requirements, market feasibilities, demand and offers, series of industry-specific samples and designed business plan templates.

⁷ QuickCash. URL: <https://quickcash.co.nz/small-business-loans-nz/>

More than 50 popular small business directions are propagandized in New Zealand. The main necessities in small business are such directions as recycling, agriculture, health care equipment, tourism, retail, teach devices, financial advisory services, child care centre, construction, taxi services, property investment, car dealership, dress making, water business, upholstering, wedding planners, fence installation and rugging. New Zealand profile shows that the economic mainstay is agriculture, but manufacturing and tourism are also important for national wealth. Service sector makes up the large portion of the GDP in New Zealand⁸. This country is considered the most prosperous and one of the least corrupt countries. Many businessmen call this country one of the safest in the world. There are also the highest standards of living. New Zealand is one of the countries with the lowest unemployment. Government of New Zealand totally transformed economy. In the past century there were many taxes and they were very high, for example, profit tax was almost half of income. All business was under control of government. At first they made agricultural reforms and declared war to bureaucracy through three methods (figure 2).

⁸ VisualPolitik EN. How Did New Zealand Become Rich? URL:
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=INyMYy-QjxM>

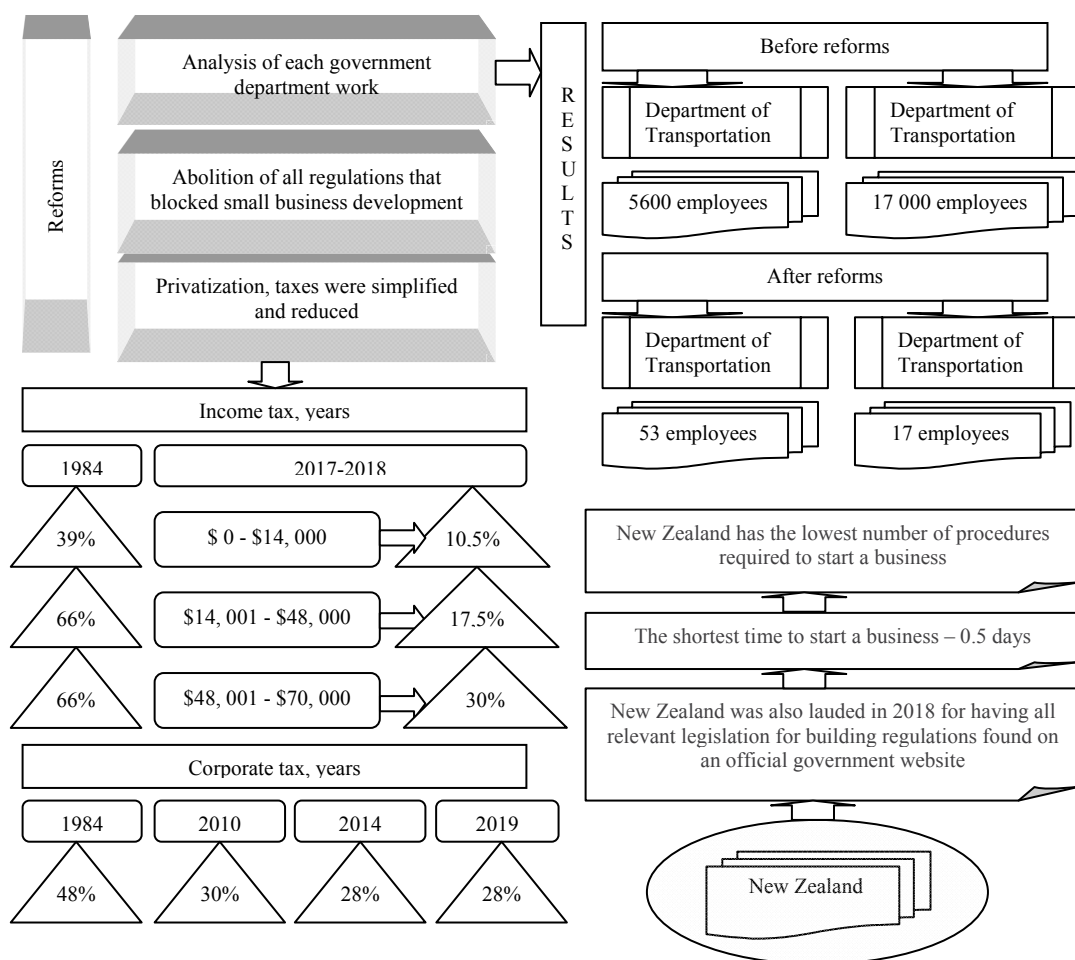


Figure 2. Measures that were taken by NZ's government to improve business environment⁹

New Zealand's government balances economic growth with environmental protection as it injects capital into maintaining domestic and international infrastructure and connectivity. Except all those positive factors New Zealand takes 6th position¹⁰ in Asia-Pacific for attracting foreign investment and 18th in the world out of 136 countries for foreign investment.

⁹ Why invest here? URL: <https://www.nzte.govt.nz/investment-and-funding/why-invest-here>

¹⁰ Beck, P., *Open for business. The case for investing in New Zealand*. URL: <https://www.nzte.govt.nz/-/media/NZTE/Downloads/Investment-and-funding/Sector-opportunities/Open-for-Business--Investing-NZ.pdf>

The United Kingdom. This country is also very attractive for doing business and took 7th place in rank. Quick glance shows the next indicators of business environment in the UK (table. 4).

Table 4
Economic indicators of business environment in the UK, 2018/19¹

Indicators	2018							
GDP Growth	0,6%							
GDP per capita	\$ 44,177							
Unemployment	3,9%-4,2%							
Inflation	2,44%							
Tax	Personal allowance	Basic rate		Higher rate		Additional rate		
	Up to £ 11,850	0 %	£11,851 to £ 46,351	20%	£ 46,351 to £ 150,000	40%	Over £ 150,000	45%

According to a law of the UK small business is defined by employees' number. Small and medium business takes over 99% of all businesses. There were 5.7 million SMEs in the UK in 2018 (12 December 2018). Small business is divided into two groups of enterprises – micro-businesses (0-9 employees) and small businesses (10-49 employees), moreover the first one accounts for 96% of all businesses (figure 3)².

¹ These rates only apply if you live in England, Wales or Northern Ireland. The devolved Scottish government sets its own income tax rates, which we'll deal with separately

² Rhodes Ch. Business statistics. URL: file:///D:/Documents/Downloads/SNO6152.pdf

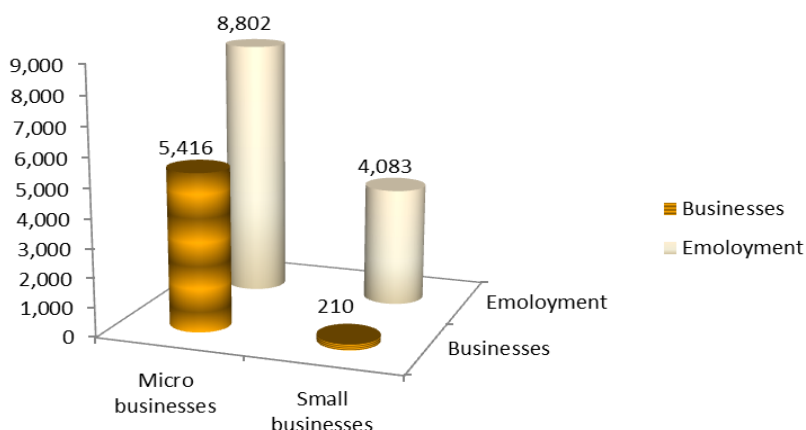


Figure 3 Share of businesses in the UK by size (micro and small), million and numbers of employees shared among them, 2018

The picture shows that most micro-businesses are mature, and many are homebased. They are related to the families which own and run them, and that in most cases the founder is still involved. It is considered that small business in the UK is the lifeblood of the British economy. Almost all British businessmen consider that they have got a very appropriate business environment (figure 4).

In the UK there are many steps which were taken to improve business conditions because a poor business environment can disproportionately affect on separate companies and their development.

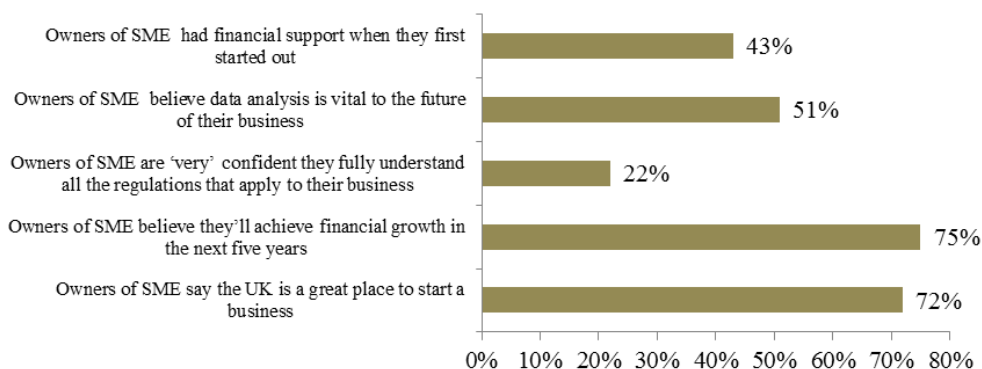


Figure 4 Attitude of British businessmen towards business conditions in the UK¹

¹ Small Business. Big Opportunity. The challenges and prospects for UK SMEs. URL:

According to investigation 43% of questioned responders had financial supports when they first started out (figure 5).

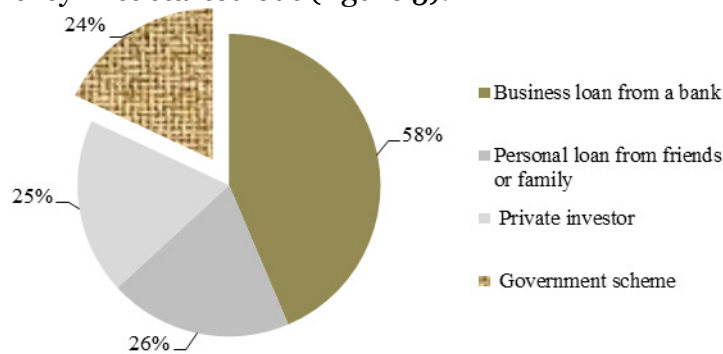


Figure 5 Areas of financial support for SME in the UK

Government of the UK makes several measures to improve business conditions (figure 6).

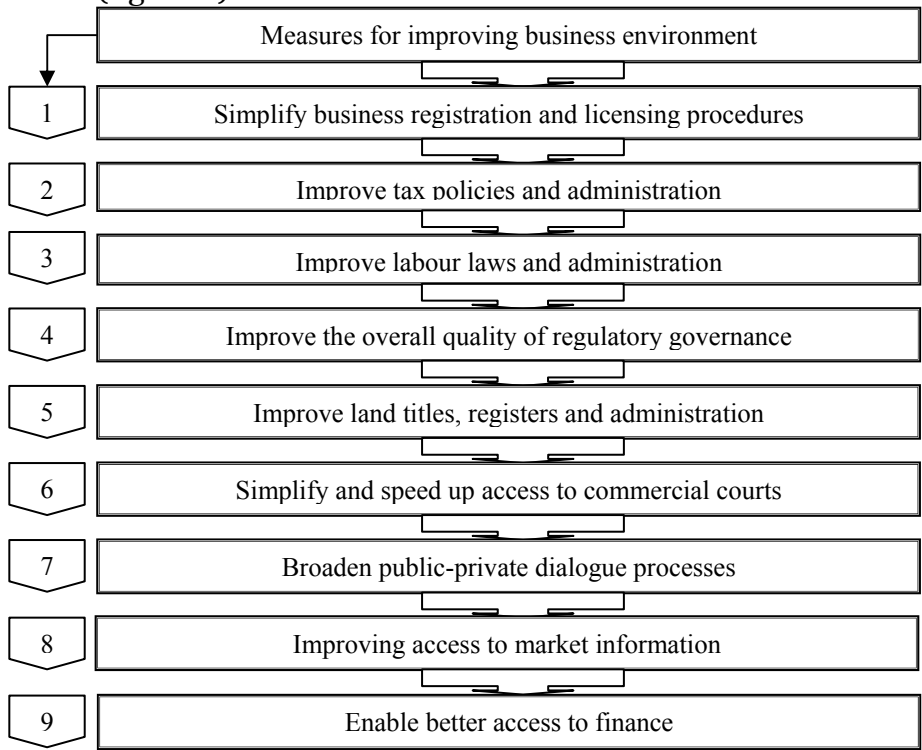


Figure 6 Measures for improving business environment in the UK

<https://www.dnb.co.uk/content/dam/english/image-library/Modernization/other/creativeux-68-sme-report-pdf-r1-updated11Jan.pdf>

Government of the UK invites overseas companies to set up their businesses on the land of Shakespeare. Investors call the UK “a land of opportunities”. Overseas investors create competitive environment to small businesses in the UK. Investors say about investment climate in the Great Britain next phrases: “this is a flourishing and innovative country”, “a very strong industrial country”, “the UK is a member of the world’s largest single market”, “the ease of doing business here”, “skills, R&D, innovation and infrastructure... it’s a good place to do business”². The UK’s competitive advantage for foreign investment and small business is clear.

The United States. This country is not only a luxury place for living but the most appropriate environment for functioning all sizes companies. This country is one of the richest in the world. 2018 small business profile shows that small firms take 99,9% of all business in the USA and employ a large proportion of people (figure 7).

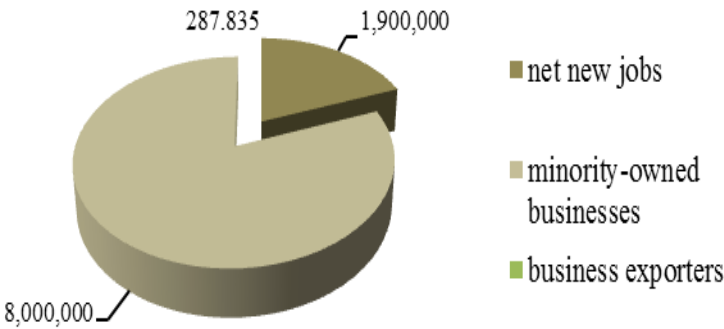


Figure 7 Small business profile, USA, 2018³

This country is also very attractive for doing business and took 6th place in rank. Quick glance shows the next indicators of business environment in the USA (table. 5).

² Five big international investors talk about why the UK is a great place to do business. Why overseas companies should set up in the UK. Department for International Trade. URL: <https://www.gov.uk/government/publications/why-overseas-companies-should-set-up-in-the-uk/why-overseas-companies-should-set-up-in-the-uk>

³ USA. 2018 small business profile. URL: <https://www.sba.gov/sites/default/files/advocacy/2018-Small-Business-Profiles-US.pdf>

There are two ways in the USA to reduce federal tax – tax credits and deductions. By the first way businessmen directly reduce the amount of tax they owe; they don't affect what bracket they are in. By the second method the tax could be reduced how much businessmen incomes are subjects to taxes. Deductions lower businessmen taxable income by the percentage of their highest federal income tax brackets. The main positive aspect in supporting business is that **the government decides how much tax businessmen owe by dividing their taxable income into chunks (tax brackets). The effectiveness of this state program is determined by a fact** that no matter which bracket owner of business is in, this person won't pay that tax rate on entire income (see table 5).

Financial support indicates possibility of small business for growing. Financial banking system in the USA works with business owners to get the right loans for their businesses. **Applicants can choose amount of loans and be certain that they are assured by stable payouts without influence of different economic factors (table 6).**

Statistic shows that most of States with the highest portion of small business have the highest increasing in GDP. It means that governments of States concerned about the proper state of the business environment (figure 8).

Table 6

Financial terms to provide loans for small business the USA¹

Amount	Loan term	Interest rate	APR with fees	Monthly payment
\$30, 000	10 years	9,25%	11,04%	\$384
\$40, 000	10 years	9,25%	10,94%	\$512
\$50, 000	10 years	8,25%	9,85%	\$613
\$60, 000	10 years	8,25%	9,81%	\$735
\$70, 000	10 years	8,25%	9,78%	\$858
\$80, 000	10 years	8,25%	9,76%	\$981
\$90, 000	10 years	8,25%	9,75%	\$1,103
\$100, 000	10 years	8,25%	9,74%	\$1,226

¹ The right bank loan. The right rate. One fast and easy application. Smartbiz. URL: https://www.smartbizloans.com/apply?partner_id=smartbiz&promo_code=adwords&campaign_id=134540&LQ=AC141:LP1&agency=LQ&medium=SEM&source=g&gclid=EAIaIQobChMItoBW-fCg4QIVmOiaCh2DTwXtEAAAYASAAEgILB_D_BwE

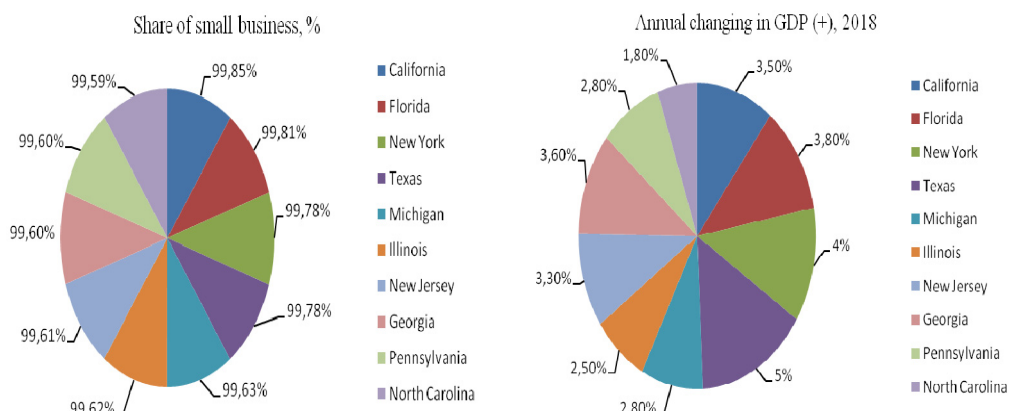


Figure 8. Share of small business and annual percent change in GDP by States of America²

By small businesses could be represented the assiduity of the individuals, families or generations of relatives. Americans believe that they can reflect the values of freedom, independence and entrepreneurship only by small businesses that are building their country and bring them wealth and stability. It doesn't matter that big businesses continue growing, small businesses become a congenerous substratum. Small businesses reflect emotional mood of nation. Bill Brunelle (July 9, 2018) avers that 70 percent of Americans have confidence in small businesses, compared with just 21 percent of Americans who have confidence in big businesses³. As communities are not built equally through cities so all citizens have desire to buy and see local goods and services which are native to their territories and express own lifestyles. The government offers much free help for planning start-ups and improving existing small business. Many states offer grants for small businesses. Robert Longley (March 04, 2018) indicated that "these grants are available only to businesses in specific fields or industries identified by the federal or state government as being especially important to the nation or state as a whole, such as medical or scientific research and environmental conservation"⁴. Small Business Administration of the USA offers loan programs for lending money to small businesses unable to secure financing on reasonable terms through normal lending channels. The SBA's beginning

² Bureau of Economic Analysis. URL: <https://www.bea.gov/news/2019/gross-domestic-product-state-third-quarter-2018>

³ Brunelle, B., *Why Americans Love Small Business*. URL:

<https://www.smallbizdaily.com/why-americans-love-small-business/>

⁴ Longley, R., *The Truth About Small Business Grants From the US Government*. URL: <https://www.thoughtco.com/small-business-grants-from-the-government-3321957>

loan program offered loans up to \$2,000,000. There are also microloan programs offers loans of up to \$35,000 to qualified start-ups in the USA. Another “a 504 Loan Program” gives a long-term, fixed-rate financing to small businesses which acquire real estate or machinery or equipment for expansion or modernization. According to the new State Small Business Credit Initiative there should be generated at least \$15 billion in locally-available small business loan programs intended to help small business grow and create new jobs. So, American lands could be attractive for small business companies and overseas investors.

Canada. A large country with the huge opportunities – by such words, investors describe Canadian business environment. Currently Canada is very appealing country for foreign investors. Canada is one of the leading G20 countries with the stable economy. Also this country is one of the largest economies in the world with the great opportunities on the local markets. Most investors see Canada as a neighbor of the USA which will help to expend cross border trade. According to conclusion of the World Economic Forum members – countries with a lot of investors have opportunity for small business development. Competiveness is the main indicator of favorable business environment. Canadian government supports the competitive business environment at appropriate level.

Small businesses in Canada occupy 97.9 % (figure 9).

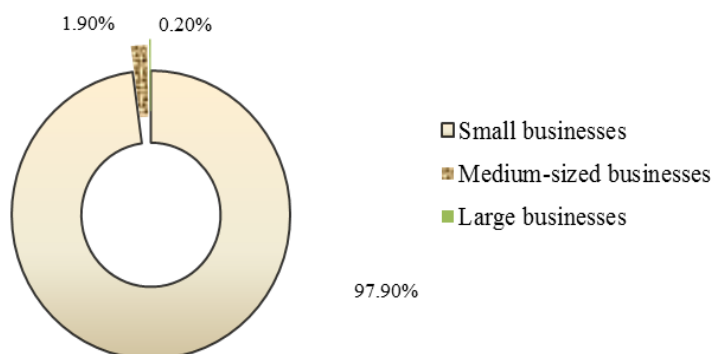


Figure 9. Proportion of different sizes of businesses in Canada⁵

Most of work places were also provided by small businesses – 67.5 percent of net employment, medium-sized businesses contributed 17.8 percent of net employment growth and large businesses contributed only 14.7 percent. Small businesses play an essential role in Canadians

⁵ Key small business statistics. Innovation, science and economic development Canada. URL:

[https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/O61.nsf/vwapj/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf/\\$file/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf](https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/O61.nsf/vwapj/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf/$file/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf)

citizens' employment across the whole country. Quick glance of economic position shows that Canada has very high level of employment (table 7). Small businesses in Canada could be theoretically divided for micro-enterprises (1-4 employees) and small businesses (5-100 employees)⁶. Canadian government has elaborated a progressive income tax system. The profit person generates from any activity is considered business income and must be declared. A business must also have a definite start date. For partnership it is not necessary to file income tax on earnings and is not required to pay tax. The income earned from a partnership should be divided between the partners, and each respective partner must file own return. Business income in Canada does not include **employment income**, such as wages or salaries received from an employer. But each province has own limitation to small business. Government of Nova Scotia established the small-business limit to \$500,000 from the 1st January, 2017; government of Manitoba also established the small-business limit to \$500,000 from the 1st, January 2019 and Saskatchewan government increased its small-business limit to \$600,000 from the 1st January 2018⁷.

⁶ Statistics on Small Business in Canada. Start-up Canada. URL: https://www.startupcan.ca/wp-content/uploads/2012/01/Statistics-on-Small-Business-in-Canada_StartupCanada.pdf

⁷ Corporate income tax rates for active business income – 2018. URL: [https://www.ey.com/Publication/vwLUAssets/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018/\\$FILE/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018.pdf](https://www.ey.com/Publication/vwLUAssets/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018/$FILE/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018.pdf)

Table 7

Economic indicators of business environment in Canada, 2018^{1 2 3}

Indicators	2018					
GDP Growth	1,9%					
GDP per capita	\$ 48,466					
Unemployment	5,6% (December)					
Inflation	1,7-2,0%					
The federal tax rate on personal income for 2018 tax year 15%, 20,5%, 26%, 29%, 33%	Taxable income ⁴	Tax rate	Taxable income	Tax rate	Taxable income	Tax rate
	\$0 to \$45,282	15%	the next \$45,281 (taxable income between \$45,282 and \$90,563)	20,5%	the next \$49,825 (taxable income between \$90,563 and \$140,388)	26 %
			the next \$59,612 (taxable income between \$140,388 and \$200,000))	29%	Income over \$200,000	33%

¹ Projected GDP per capita Ranking (2018-2023). Statistics times. URL: <http://statisticstimes.com/economy/projected-world-gdp-capita-ranking.php>

² 2018 CPI and Inflation Rates for Canada. URL: Inflation Calculator. URL: <https://inflationcalculator.ca/2018-cpi-and-inflation-rates-for-canada/>

³ I Income Tax Rates for the Self-Employed 2018. Turbotax. URL: <https://turbotax.intuit.ca/tips/income-tax-rates-for-the-self-employed-6393>

⁴ Taxable income bracket

The second main support for small business is available loans for growing and development. The Canadian small business financing programs make it easier for small firms to get loans from financial institutions by sharing the risk with lenders. During the past 10 years, small businesses in Canada have received approximately \$9, 5 billion (63,000 loans). Each company can get up to \$1,000,000 with limitation amount in \$350,000 for goals such as purchasing new or used equipment and renting properties¹. Financing is available for such goals as: getting necessary vehicles, buying computer or telecommunications equipment and software, manufacture and service equipment (for restaurants and hotels), franchises and goodwill, as well as research and development programs. Financing is also could be directed for purchasing or improving land and buildings. Such loans are provided by different institutions and the interest rates could be variable or fixed. Businessmen must take security measures at the assets which were financed. They also can take an additional unsecured personal guarantee. Financing programs are obtainable for small businesses or start-ups, whose gross annual revenues are \$10 million or less. The government of Canada provides financing help to entrepreneurs who are operating in specific industry sectors and for certain demographic groups. Indigenous entrepreneurs could get to \$150,000² for starting a business or to \$250,000 for growing existing business. For agricultural firms there are special financing programs that could be used by entrepreneurs who are working in this sphere but they must meet next criteria – the purchase of land and the construction or improvement of buildings up to \$500, 000 and others purpose – up to \$350, 000.

Canada is rich for fossil fuels, large supply of forestland, large abundance for stone, gravel, natural resources (iron ore, nickel, zinc, copper, gold, lead, diamonds, silver) and a large fishing industry. Companies which are operating in mentioned spheres and deal with intrinsical for Canada resources could apply for government support and got the worth assistance for doing business in that country.

The transportation and storage industry, shipping of goods, warehousing and storing products are also main start-ups for small business. The Innovative Solutions Canada program helps through government to small businesses to come up with a new innovative product,

¹ Canada small business financing program. Innovation, science and economic development Canada. URL:

[https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/\\$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf](https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf)

² BDC Indigenous entrepreneur loan. Government of Canada. URL:

<https://canadabusiness.ca/programs/bdc-growth-capital-for-aboriginal-business-1/>

service or solution in answer to a specific challenge they face. Others Canadian state programs help to develop small business since it makes country more powerful and attractive for overseas investors (figure 10).

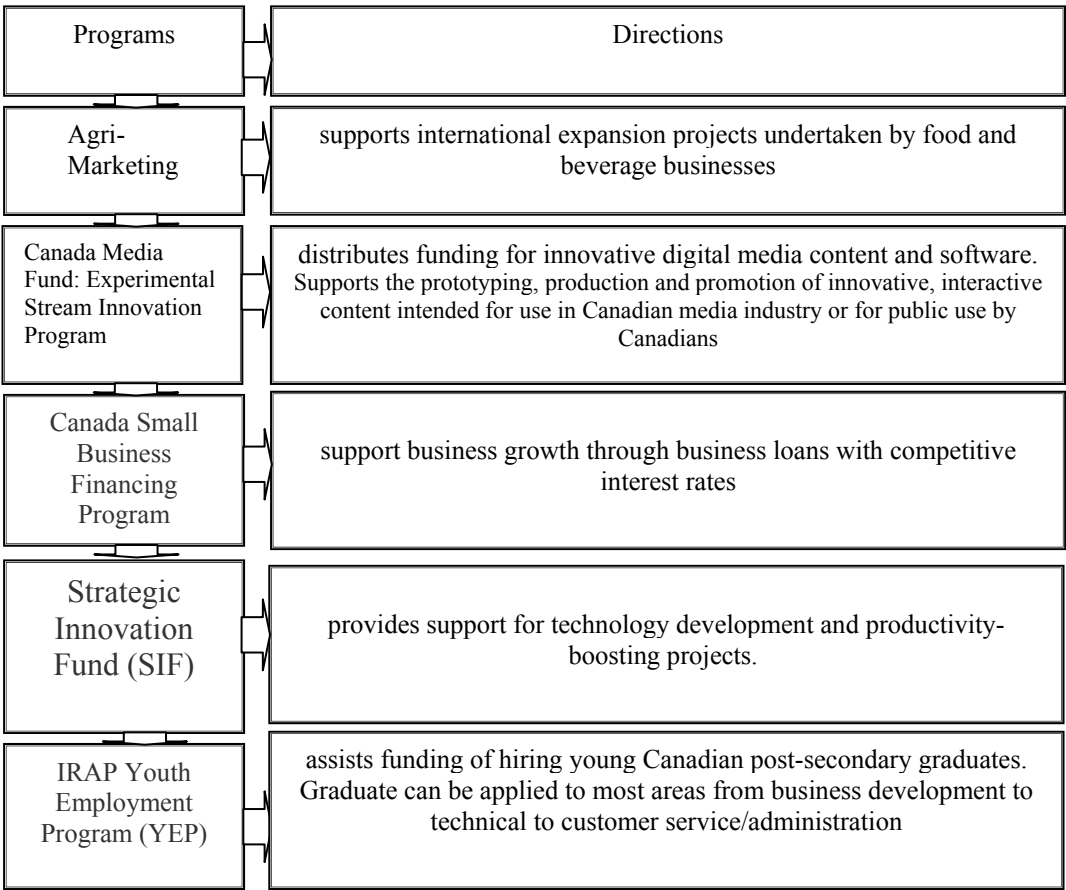


Figure 10. Canadian programs for supporting business development³

The main lesson which could be borrowed by other nations from supporting small business programs in Canada is a very simple way to obtain loans because the government shares financial risks with lenders.

Conclusions

Small business is referring to activity according to current legislation, employing a certain number of employees and getting profit in volume

³ Mentor Works. Canadian Government Grants and Loans for Small Business. URL: <https://www.mentorworks.ca/what-we-offer/government-funding/funding-regions/federal/>

established by law. The difference between small and large enterprises activities is volume of revenue, number of employees, process of functioning, ownership and tax system. Small business depends from many factors but the most important aspect of doing small business is government support. Research shows that almost all countries try to encourage a small business development by a set of measures such as lower interest rate, giving tax incentives, creation of friendly trade policies, providing contract work to private companies, loans, grants and disbursements.

References

Jones, J., (2018), *A guide to government support for small businesses*. URL: <http://www.thepitch.uk/finance/government-support-for-small-businesses>

Make business your business. A guide to a new business. Starting and developing. URL:

https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/32246/12-828-make-business-your-business-guide-to-starting.pdf

Nash, H.S., (2018), *New Zealand's Support for Small Business*. URL: <https://www.business.govt.nz/assets/Uploads/Documents/Small-business-booklet.pdf>

Dean, H.J., *New Zealand's Support for Small Business*. URL: <https://www.beehive.govt.nz/sites/default/files/2017-12/Small%20Business%20-%20Annex%20%20Small%20Business%20Brochure.pdf>

Innovation, science and economic development, Canada. URL: [https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/\\$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf](https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf)

Budget Code of Ukraine, (2010), URL:

<http://zakon2.rada.gov.ua/laws/show/2456-17>

QuickCash. URL: <https://quickecash.co.nz/small-business-loans-nz/>

VisualPolitik EN. How Did New Zealand Become Rich? URL:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=INyMYy-QjxM>

Why invest here? URL: <https://www.nzte.govt.nz/investment-and-funding/why-invest-here>

Beck, P., *Open for business. The case for investing in New Zealand*. URL: <https://www.nzte.govt.nz/-/media/NZTE/Downloads/Investment-and-funding/Sector-opportunities/Open-for-Business--Investing-NZ.pdf>

The New 2018 UK Income Tax Rates and Brackets. URL: <https://www.mileiq.com/en-gb/blog/2018-uk-income-tax-rates-brackets/>

Rhodes Ch. Business statistics. URL:

file:///D:/Documents/Downloads/SN06152.pdf

Small Business. Big Opportunity. The challenges and prospects for UK SMEs. URL:

<https://www.dnb.co.uk/content/dam/english/image-library/Modernization/other/creativeux-68-sme-report-pdf-r1-updated11Jan.pdf>

Five big international investors talk about why the UK is a great place to do business. Why overseas companies should set up in the UK. Department for International Trade. URL:

<https://www.gov.uk/government/publications/why-overseas-companies-should-set-up-in-the-uk/why-overseas-companies-should-set-up-in-the-uk>

USA. 2018 small business profile. URL:

<https://www.sba.gov/sites/default/files/advocacy/2018-Small-Business-Profiles-US.pdf>

Orem, T., (2018-2019), *Federal Income Tax Brackets and New Tax Rates*. URL:

<https://www.nerdwallet.com/blog/taxes/federal-income-tax-brackets/>

The right bank loan. The right rate. One fast and easy application. Smartbiz. URL:

https://www.smartbizloans.com/apply?partner_id=smartbiz&promo_code=adwords&campaign_id=134540&LQ=AC141:LP1&agency=LQ&medium=SEM&source=g&gclid=EAIaIQobChMItoBW-fCg4QIVmOiaCh2DTwXtEAAYASAAEgILB_D_BwE

Bureau of Economic Analysis. URL:

<https://www.bea.gov/news/2019/gross-domestic-product-state-third-quarter-2018>

Brunelle, B., *Why Americans Love Small Business*. URL:

<https://www.smallbizdaily.com/why-americans-love-small-business/>

Longley, R. The Truth About Small Business Grants From the US Government. URL: <https://www.thoughtco.com/small-business-grants-from-the-government-3321957>

Key small business statistics. Innovation, science and economic development Canada. URL:

[https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/061.nsf/vwapj/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf/\\$file/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf](https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/061.nsf/vwapj/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf/$file/KSBS-PSRPE_Jan_2019_eng.pdf)

Projected GDP per capita Ranking (2018-2023). Statistics times. URL:

<http://statisticstimes.com/economy/projected-world-gdp-capita-ranking.php>

2018 CPI and Inflation Rates for Canada. URL: Inflation Calculator. URL: <https://inflationcalculator.ca/2018-cpi-and-inflation-rates-for-canada/>

Statistics on Small Business in Canada. Start-up Canada. URL: https://www.startupcan.ca/wp-content/uploads/2012/01/Statistics-on-Small-Business-in-Canada_StartupCanada.pdf

Income Tax Rates for the Self-Employed 2018. TurboTax. URL: <https://turbotax.intuit.ca/tips/income-tax-rates-for-the-self-employed-6393>

Corporate income tax rates for active business income – 2018. URL: [https://www.ey.com/Publication/vwLUAssets/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018/\\$FILE/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018.pdf](https://www.ey.com/Publication/vwLUAssets/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018/$FILE/Tax-Rates-Corporate-2018.pdf)

Canada small business financing program. Innovation, science and economic development Canada. URL: [https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/\\$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf](https://www.ic.gc.ca/eic/site/csbfp-pfpec.nsf/vwapj/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf/$file/Brochure_CSBFP_EN.pdf)

BDC Indigenous entrepreneur loan. Government of Canada. URL: <https://canadabusiness.ca/programs/bdc-growth-capital-for-aboriginal-business-1/>

Mentor Works. Canadian Government Grants and Loans for Small Business. URL: <https://www.mentorworks.ca/what-we-offer/government-funding/funding-regions/federal/>

ASSESSING POST 1991 ETHIOPIA'S INDUSTRIALIZATION AND INDUSTRIAL POLICY

Fesseha Mulu Gebremariam,*

fmulat647@gmail.com;
fesseha2017@gmail.com

Bizuayehu Daba Feyisa**

bizuayehud539@gmail.com

Abstract: Ethiopia is still largely an agrarian state where 80-85% of its population's livelihood depends on agriculture. Beginning from the Imperial regime in the early 20th Century, Ethiopia has gone through various regimes and their development policies, strategies and programs. In the post-1991, following the downfall of the Dergue regime by Ethiopian People's Revolutionary Democratic Front (EPRDF) led guerrilla fighting, Ethiopia has witnessed a wide range of economic and policy reforms first under the SAP sponsored by the WB/IMF, and, later as of the early 2000s, the ruling party install developmental oriented economic programmes adopted from Asian tigers to transform the country's economy from an agrarian-based to industrial and service-led one. And, this desk research aims to assess Ethiopia's industrial policy and its industrialization experience after 1991. The study found out that it is as of the early 2000s Ethiopia has able to experience a meaningful change in the manufacturing and industrial sector in which the share of the sector to the GDP of the state improved significantly from 39.8% in 2013/14 FY to 46.57% by the end of GTPII in the FY2019/20. Despite such change, the sector is affected by lack of sufficient well-trained manpower, capital and infrastructure, bad governance, absence of institutions that will support the sector etc.

Keywords: Development, EPRDF, Industrialization, Industrial Policy, Industrial Sector.

1. Introduction

1.1. Defining the concept of "Industrialization"

The term "Industrialization" is commonly associated with the development experience of "the Global North of Western Europe and

* **Researcher, corresponding and first author, Department of Civics and Ethics Studies, Jimma University, Ethiopia.**

** **Researcher, second author, Department of Civics and Ethics Studies, Jimma University, Ethiopia.**

North America” despite there is a controversy on it. For instance, political historians like Professor Ali Mazrui noted that Industrialization is not solely about Western societies, but others like the Old Chinese Empire, the Egyptian Kingdoms, and the Persian Kingdoms have gone through various activities and attempts to modernize their societies and economies through different technologies of their time¹.

Some literature in the late 19th and early 20th centuries define industrialization purely in economic terms as the existence of manufacturing plants that process raw materials into finished/semi-finished products². In this regard, the level of countries’ industrialization was measured by the number of industries they have³.

But, later definitions define the term beyond physical/number of Industries. For instance, the Business Dictionary defines it as:

“The process by which traditionally nonindustrial sectors (such as agriculture, education, health) of an economy become increasingly similar to the manufacturing sector of the economy” (Accessed on 03/10/2018 from URL:

<http://www.businessdictionary.com/definition/industrialization.html>).

Besides, Industrialization can be defined as a process in which an agrarian economy is transformed into a manufacturing-led economy⁴. From this definition, one can understand that industrialization is a long process. It is not an overnight phenomenon. Plus, industrialization is mainly about the manufacturing sector.

1.2. An overview of Ethiopia’s Industrial Policy: Historical Analysis

Ethiopia has been experiencing several industrial policies and programmes across various regimes in which some progress has been achieved through the installed programmes despite not as intended. 80-85% of its population is still in the rural areas where the agriculture sector still absorbs most of the working force of the country⁵.

In the Imperial regime, pre-Italian occupation period where most of the population live in the rural areas and agriculture was the main economic sector, the then development policy was highly interested in

¹ Nzau, M., *Africa’s Industrialization Debate: A Critical Analysis*. The Journal of Language, Technology & Entrepreneurship in Africa, Vol. 2. No.1, 2010, ISSN 1998-1279.

² *Ibidem*.

³ Leys, C., *The Rise and Fall of Development Theory*. Oxford, James Currey, 1996.

⁴ Kaldor, N., *Strategic Factors in Economic Development*, Ithaca: Cornell University, 1967; Cornwall, J., *Modern Capitalism. Its Growth and Transformation*, New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1977.

⁵ Altenburg, T., *Industrial policy in Ethiopia*. Discussion Paper / Deutsches Institut für Entwicklungspolitik, 2010. ISBN 978-3-88985-477-3.

building social infrastructures like communications, roads, and very few state-owned industries and commercial farms, especially in Eritrea, were established. Thus, the development policy of the country gave little consideration for the development of industries and the manufacturing sector⁶.

Yet in the post-Italian occupation during the late 1940s and 1950s, much of the economy remained unchanged with primitive farming method and subsistence standard of living. Most farmers cultivated small plots of land or herded cattle. The agricultural sector grew slightly, and the industrial sector represented a small part of the total economy. The government focused its development efforts on expansion of the bureaucratic structure and ancillary services. In the early 1950s, Emperor Haileselassie decided to transform the economy from a subsistence economy to an agro-industrial economy, and to this end, the National Economic Council was established in 1954/55 to coordinate, follow up and prepare the state's development plans.

Accordingly, the First Five-Year Plan (1957-61) was introduced,⁷ and gave more emphasis to the development of infrastructure in the areas of transportation, construction, communication, roads, the development of human resources to work in the existing few industries, and accelerating the development of the agricultural sector through the expansion of commercial farms⁸. In this regard, the first 5-year plan of the emperor aims to develop industrialization through the introduction and development of light industries that would help the country minimize its import by producing consumer goods for the domestic market⁹. Accordingly, several policy measures were introduced to create a conducive environment for domestic investors in the sector like protecting domestic firms from unfair competition of foreign companies via imposing high tariff on foreign firms and banning certain products from being imported¹⁰.

The Second and Third Five-Year Plans (1962/63-72/73) introduced during the Imperial regime also aims to change the yet unchanged, traditional, less productive agrarian economy of the state to an agro-

⁶ Mbate, M., *Structural change and industrial policy: A case study of Ethiopia's leather sector*. Journal of African Trade 3 (2016) 85–100, 2016.

⁷ Altenburg, T., *Industrial policy in Ethiopia*. Discussion Paper / Deutsches Institut für Entwicklungspolitik, 2010. ISBN 978-3-88985-477-3.

⁸ Ibidem.

⁹ Gebreyesus, M., *Industrial policy and development in Ethiopia: Evolution and present experimentation*. Learning to Compete, Working paper 6, 2013.

¹⁰ Ibidem.

industrial one¹¹. Still, these two consecutive five plans emphasize the role of agriculture to the state economy and the need to modernize it via commercial agriculture in which this would positively affect peasant agriculture and the non-agricultural sectors¹².

Following the downfall of the Imperial regime by the military junta called "the Dergue", in terms of political ideology, there was an absolute departure from the previous one i.e. from market-oriented liberalism to socialism as a guiding economic and political ideology through which the government became the main actor in the economy. The Dergue has introduced a 10-year development plan (1984-94) in which like the previous development plans of the Imperial regime, the plan recognizes agriculture is still the backbone of the economy where most people are living in the rural areas, and agriculture is the main source of employment where the people depend on their livelihood. In this regard, the Dergue gives second priority to the industry/manufacturing sector next to the agricultural sector¹³.

The Dergue didn't encourage large scale private investment and imposed a restriction not to exceed half a million Birr a total asset of an individual, and prohibited entrepreneurs not to participate in more than one business ventures. Despite, the 10 years plan aims to that the manufacturing sector to grow 10.8% per annum, and to increase the total share of the sector to the overall GDP of the country from 16% in 1984 to 24% in 1994¹⁴.

Like the previous two regimes, EPRDF recognizes in its policy documents, agriculture is still the major economic sector in the economy. First, it introduced a development policy called "Agricultural-Development-Led Industrialization (ADLI)" in which it assumes that bringing change in the agricultural sector is basic to transform into the industry-led economy through accumulating capital in the agricultural sector¹⁵. Later a more comprehensive industrial policy was introduced by the Sustainable Development and Poverty Reduction Program (SDPRP) 2002/03-2004/05, rooted on ADLI. SDPRP mainly aims at realizing

¹¹ Mbate, M., *Structural change and industrial policy: A case study of Ethiopia's leather sector*. Journal of African Trade 3 (2016) 85–100, 2016.

¹² Gebreyesus, M., *Industrial policy and development in Ethiopia: Evolution and present experimentation*. Learning to Compete, Working paper 6, 2013.

¹³ Mbate, M., *Structural change and industrial policy: A case study of Ethiopia's leather sector*. Journal of African Trade 3 (2016) 85–100, 2016.

¹⁴ Gebreyesus, M., *Industrial policy and development in Ethiopia: Evolution and present experimentation*. Learning to Compete, Working paper 6, 2013.

¹⁵ Altenburg, T., *Industrial policy in developing countries, overview and lessons from seven country cases*. Discussion Paper 4/2011. German Development Institute, Bonn, 2011. Available at: https://www.die-gdi.de/uploads/media/DP_4.2011.pdf.

sustainable growth by reducing poverty reduction through maintaining macroeconomic stability in the market¹⁶.

Following SDPRP, the government has introduced a new development plan called "Plan for Accelerated and Sustained Development to End Poverty (PASDEP) that will be executed between 2005/06-2009/10 based on the strategic directions of SDPRP. The plan was prepared in light of the MDGs, and is, therefore, aims to meet the objectives of MDGs. PASDEP is more comprehensive than SDPRP and constitutes issues like rural-urban linkages, and pastoral development, and spatial dimensions of the growth strategy¹⁷.

Still, under EPRDF, another very ambitious two developments were introduced that aimed a total transformation of the economy so that the service sector and the manufacturing shall take the lion share of the economy. The first plan, The Growth and Transformation Plan I (2010/11-2014/15), aims that the country should be among the middle-income countries by the year 2025¹⁸. GTPI envisages that the manufacturing sector shall grow annually at 21.4% in a high case scenario and 20% base case scenario from 10.2% in the base year. To this end, the plan calls for huge investment in the development of social infrastructures, education, etc. Plus, the plan introduces the issue of industrial parks to attract Foreign Direct Investment and to support SMEs despite the service and agriculture sector contribute about 90% to the overall GDP of the country¹⁹. GTP I gave special emphasis to five sub-sectors of the manufacturing sector: textiles and garments; leather and leather products; sugar and related products; cement; and the metal and engineering industries²⁰. In the GTP I, it is the industry sector that was the highest growing sector with nearly 20% per annum.

These days, the FDRE government has already introduced and is executing another five-year plan called "Growth and Transformation Plan II (GTPII) (2015/16–2020/21) an extension of the GTP I which gave high emphasis on manufacturing industrial sector. It focuses on export and import substitution in which the plan aims to increase the manufacturing sector by 3-fold within 10 years, creating about 2 million job opportunity in the manufacturing sector and increasing manufacturing export by 4-

¹⁶ *Ibidem*.

¹⁷ *Ibidem*.

¹⁸ Gebremaraia, F.M., Admas, E., and Teha, K., *The Performance of Condominium Housing Program in Jimma town, Ethiopia: A Case Study*. Annals of the University of Craiova for Journalism, Communication and Management. Volume 3:5-31, 2017.

¹⁹ World Bank Group, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2015. Available online on the following link: URL: <http://www.worldbank.org/en/country/ethiopia>

²⁰ *Ibidem*.

fold, developing about 5000 km of railway network are some of the major targets of the plan. Thus, the plan identifies some priority areas in the manufacturing sector. These are Textiles and garments, leather & leather products, agro-processing, chemical and pharmaceutical products, metals and engineering, electronic products, petrochemicals, and biotechnology, packaging²¹.

The following table summarizes Ethiopia's industrial policy and development phases across various regimes from the Imperial period up-to-date.

Table 1. Ethiopia's Industrial Policy and Development Phases across Regimes

	<i>Imperial period (pre-1974)</i>	<i>The Dergue regime (1975-91)</i>	<i>The EPRDF regime (post-1992)</i>
<i>Guiding policy/vision</i>	Market-oriented	Command economy	Market-oriented
<i>Public/private role</i>	Private-led	State-led	Private-led but also strong state role
<i>Ownership structure</i>	Dominance of foreign-owned enterprises	Dominance of public-owned enterprise	Dominance of domestic private-owned enterprises
<i>Target industries</i>	Import-substituting and labour-intensive industries (e.g. textile, food, cement)	Import-substituting and labour-intensive industries but also basic industries	Export-oriented & labour-intensive industries (e.g. Textile, leather, agro-processing, cement)
<i>Envisaged key player</i>	Foreign investment	Public sector investment	Domestic private sector
<i>Policy instruments</i>	Protection of domestic market through high tariff and banning of certain imports Provision of economic incentives (tax holidays, remission of	Protection of domestic market through high tariff and quantitative restrictions Financing,	Direct support for selected export sectors through capacity building and other means Provision of economic incentives (tax

²¹ National Planning Commission of the Federal Democratic Republic of Ethiopia, *Growth and Transformation Plan II (GTP II) (2015/16-2019/20)*. Volume I: Main Text, 2016. (It is accessible on the following link URL:

https://dagethiopia.org/new/images/DAG_DOCS/GTP2_English_Translation_Final_June_21_2016.pdf).

	indirect tax on capital goods etc.) & preferential credit scheme	subsidizing and ensuring monopoly power for the state-owned enterprises	holidays, remission of indirect tax on capital goods etc.) & preferential credit scheme
Government role	Infrastructure & human resource development and ownership of selective industries	Mainly government ownership	Infrastructure & human resource development, ownership of selective industries, and capacity building of the private sector

Source²² and researchers' compilation.

1.3. Industrialization, Economic Transformation and Developmental States: Lessons from Asian Tigers

The so-called developed countries of our times have never gone through similar paths of industrial development. On the one hand, neo-liberalists argue that liberalism is the only best possible way/path to development and economic transformation of the least developed countries. On the other hand, the economic history of the South-East Asian countries especially the so-called "Asian Tigers" shows there is another shortest possible path to industrialization. The westerners suggest and strongly argue that democracy and liberalism is the base for sustainable, all-inclusive economic development while the economic history of the Asian Tigers disproves this claim for the fact that the Asian Tigers were under authoritarian regimes with "developmental state" as a leading economic and political ideology while experiencing miraculous economic development and industrialization.

In this paper, the economic history of the Asian Tigers which is exemplary to all developing countries in general, to Ethiopia in particular, taking Taiwan and South Korea. Since, these two countries unlike Hong Kong and Singapore which are more or less urban countries, have societies with similar economic history with Ethiopia. Thus, discussing their case would be a good lesson to economies like ours.

²² Gebreyesus, M., *Industrial policy and development in Ethiopia: Evolution and present experimentation*. Learning to Compete, Working paper 6, 2013.

1.3.1. Taiwan's Trend of Industrialization and Economic Transformation: An Overview

Taiwan is also officially known as the Republic of China (ROC) is located in East Asia neighbouring with the People's Republic of China (PRC) to the west, Japan to the northeast, and the Philippines to the south. The country has about 23.58 million population. Originally, it was part of the mainland China, but following the coming of the communist party led by Mao Zedong to power, the then leaders of China flee to Taiwan and form their state in the 1949²³. After which the leaders of Taiwan feared that the Chinese communists might not swallow them and the people of Taiwan would be happy to see the communists in Taiwan unless they improve the economy of their citizens²⁴.

The country following its adoption of Export-oriented industrial policy in the 1960s, it has begun to experience good economic changes²⁵. It has great working on the establishment of state-led industrial zones especially on its seaports so that it easily transport the manufacturing products to the Global market²⁶. Taiwan grows sustainably/ continuously for longer decades dramatically that its economy grows four-fold in the early 1990s from what was in the 1950's²⁷. Between the FY1970-85, Taiwan's manufactured export goods grow on average at a rate of 26% per annum²⁸. Taiwan apart from manufacturing, it gives more emphasis to domestic saving in which the government will use it for further investment in the economy²⁹.

In Taiwan, the government intervenes selectively in the market not to replace the role of the private sector. Rather, it is to avoid market failure in which the government's intervention in the market is to stabilize the economy, and smoothing the playing field for the private sector. That path is "a state led-capitalism" where the state is a great actor in the market

²³ Park, J.H., *The East Asian Model of Economic Development and Developing Countries*. Journal of Developing Societies Vol 4(18): 330-53, 2002.

²⁴ Wu, T., *Economic History of Taiwan: A Survey*, 2004 (URL Link <https://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/pdf/10.1111/j.1467-8446.2004.00123.x> . Accessed on 11/10/2018).

²⁵ Liu, S., *Industrial Development and Structural Adaptation in Taiwan: Some Issues of Learned Entrepreneurship*. Iee transactions on engineering management. Vol 45 (4), 1998.

²⁶ *Ibidem*.

²⁷ Castel-Branco, C., *What are the major lessons from East Asian Development Experience?* 1996. (Also available on the following URL link:

www.iese.ac.mz/lib/.../Lesson%20from%20East%20Asia%200002.pdf Accessed on 14/10/2018).

²⁸ *Ibidem*.

²⁹ Ash, R., & a Green, M., *Taiwan in the 21st Century*. Routledge, New York, 2007. ISBN10: 0-415-41256-0. ISBN13: 978-0-415-41256-8.

along with the private sector³⁰. This kind of ideology is known in most cases as “developmental state”³¹.

Not only this, Taiwan had invested a lot on human development, education, technical schools, and preparing effective technocrats insulated from political pressure and interference who can manage the state and its economy³². Taiwan has shown amazing progress in the development of human capital, attracting FDIs, industrialization and innovation. Its export-oriented economic policy that favours most the manufacturing sector helps the country a lot to sustainably grow economically for more than 5-6 decades that greatly determines the country’s economic history. For instance, Taiwan grows in average 8.5% per annum in the 30 years from the 1980s to 2012³³.

The Asian Tigers are good example for LDCs that they adopt policies that promote export since the 1960s in the policies are pragmatic, flexible and adaptive³⁴. Taiwan was strongly working on the development of various industrial parks that would overtake the traditional less productive, less efficient agricultural sector. The industrial parks were established and developed in a way that they are labour intensive such as textile and garment³⁵. Like the other Tigers, Taiwan did not start the industrialization process from very sophisticated manufactures that need high-tech industry goods and highly qualified human resources. Rather, with basic standardized manufacturing products that need less Research and Development (R&D). In this case, Taiwan’s manufacturing sector was dominated by small \$ medium scale industries in its early economic development stage.

But, unlike South Korea, Hong Kong and Singapore with geographic area restrictions, Taiwan’s industrial policy encourages to develop experimental pilot projects in special economic zones³⁶. Taiwan has gone through the two most important stages of industrialization. One is the case

³⁰ Park, J.H., *The East Asian Model of Economic Development and Developing Countries*. Journal of Developing Societies vol. 4(18): 330-53, 2002.

³¹ Mulu, F., & Daba, B., *In defence of Ethiopia’s adoption of “Democratic Developmental State” – Issues and Challenges*. Üniversitepark Bülten, 6(2), 66-73, 2017.

³² Avalos, H.R.B., *The Industry oriented Asian Tigers and the Natural Resource-based Pacific Alliance Economic Growth Models*, 2013. <https://mpira.ub.uni-muenchen.de/61665/>

³³ *Ibidem*.

³⁴ World Bank, World Development Indicators, 2013. DataBase. www.worldbank.org.

³⁵ Ito, K., *Sources of Learning by Exporting Effects. Does Exports Promote Innovation?* Economic Research Institute for ASEAN and East Asia (ERIA). Discussion Paper Series. Senshu University, School of Economics. June 2012.

³⁶ Ash, R., & a Green, M., *Taiwan in the 21st Century*. Routledge, New York, 2007. ISBN10: 0-415-41256-0. ISBN13: 978-0-415-41256-8.

of 1960 to 1980s in which its economic policies focus on import substitution and export promotion, while the late 1980s period, the second stage, is science and technology-oriented phase that makes the country the hub of sophisticated industries and innovation³⁷.

Besides, Taiwan was too critical at its anti-inflationary policy, and the state loan to private investors and individuals was too high in which this helps it to accumulate huge capital and finance its entire gross domestic capital formation in 1971-1994 unlike South Korea that heavily depend of foreign loans and aid to facilitate industrialization and investment of the manufacturing sector³⁸.

The economic growth and industrialization of Taiwan is mainly due to the government's economic policy on the development of the manufacturing sector as of the 1960s onwards that calls for export-oriented, and its effective implementation of "developmental state ideology." In the 1950s the government mainly focuses on import substitution while in the 1960s the shift was to export-oriented manufacturing sector shall be developed in the economy. To encourage import substitution, the government took various measures like a heavy tariff on importing goods, selective credit policies favouring preferred sectors mainly textile and garment that is labour intensive, establishing special economic zone/industry parks with special support from the government were established³⁹.

Generally, the following factors have played a crucial for Taiwan's economic miracle and in other economic tigers in the East Asia⁴⁰:

"(1) These countries (economies) have all pursued export-oriented development strategies;

(2) They have been successful in maintaining high rates of saving and investment;

(3) Emphasis has been placed on promoting universal education and making enormous investments in human capital to better absorb and adapt the most advanced technology; and,

(4) For almost all of the East Asian economies, except for Hong Kong, industrial policies were an important part of their growth strategies."

³⁷ *Ibidem*.

³⁸ Henderson, J., & et al., *Economic governance and poverty reduction in South Korea*, 2002.

³⁹ Noland, M. and Pack, H., *Industrial policy in an era of globalization: Lessons from Asia*. Institute for International Economics, Washington D.C., 2003.

⁴⁰ Ash, R., & a Green, M., *Taiwan in the 21st Century*. Routledge, New York, 2007. ISBN10: 0-415-41256-0. ISBN13: 978-0-415-41256-8.

1.3.2. The Secret of South Korea's "Economic Miracle"

South Korea, officially called as "the Republic of Korea" is established as an independent state in 1948 with a land size of 96,920 square kilometres and a water size of 2,800 square kilometres shared a land border only with North Korea in the North.

Recent economic history of the country indicates that South Korea has gone through a miraculous economic development. It is General Park Chung-hee, despite he was a dictator, credited as he lays a founding base for the remarkable economic development and industrialization of South Korea that went through⁴¹.

Historically, in June 1950, North Korea evades the South in which the communist North was almost at a better economic status than the capitalist south on then time in which many southerners were happy to be with the North⁴². But, the South was saved by the UN forces from completely swallowed by the communists, and after the war is over, the South remained under extreme poverty and development. In 1961, a military coup led by Lieutenant Colonel Kim Jong-Il helped General Park Chung-hee came to power. Despite he was a dictator and remembered for his brutal rule and gross human right violations, it is under his leadership that his country grew economically and sustainably. For instance, between FY1963-77, public enterprises grew an average rate of 10% per annum, and the manufacturing sector grew dramatically under the watch and protection of the government in various ways. For instance, the government's protection to infant industries from unfair foreign companies' competition, domestic firms were given special access to various credits⁴³.

General Park's government invested a lot first in some small manufacturing sectors that could accommodate the agricultural sector, a good example for this was the establishment of several specialized economic zone/industry parks that are labour intensive in the very beginning which later the IPs become centre of innovation⁴⁴. The government was great/key actor in the economy not only through managing the macro-economic planning centrally but also through investing in the manufacturing and educational sector aggressively⁴⁵.

What's good and exemplary in South Korea like in Taiwan is while the economy grows and industrialization booms, it doesn't lead to increase

⁴¹ Henderson, J., & et al., *Economic governance and poverty reduction in South Korea*, 2002.

⁴² Ibidem.

⁴³ Noland, M. and Pack, H., *Industrial policy in an era of globalization: Lessons from Asia*. Institute for International Economics, Washington D.C., 2003.

⁴⁴ Ibidem.

⁴⁵ World Bank, *World Development Indicators* 2004, 2004a. CD-ROM.

income inequality⁴⁶. South Korea has experienced a rapid and sustainable economic growth for about 40-45 years which are determinants to what the country is today⁴⁷. The country grows economically in average 7.5% per annum in between the FY 1960-2002, for instance. The manufacturing value-added sector grows at about 16.5% and 17.5 %between 1960-69, and 1970-79 respectively. Besides the agricultural value-added sector continuously decline and reaches about 1.7% in 2002. In 1960, the share of the agricultural sector to Korea's GDP was about 39%, and the manufacturing was about 14% of the GDP, but in 2004 the agriculture was about 4% while the manufacturing was about 29% of the GDP. Not only this but also in 1980 about 34% in 1980 and 18% in 1990 of all employees were working in the agriculture sector, however in 2006 only 9% work on the same agriculture while industry has a share of 28% and the service sector about 64% in 2003⁴⁸.

In the early 1950s, the government of South Korea was to some extent focusing on a kind of import substitution & protectionist approach towards industrialization while in the 1960s was a turning point in its economy. The government introduced an export-oriented economic approach/policy⁴⁹. By doing this, the government was successful. For instance, in between the FY 1962-73, the total share of the country's export increases from 6% in 1962 to 30% in 1973⁵⁰.

In terms of poverty reduction, South Korea was doing great! In the 1960's many people were under the poverty line, but in the late 1990s, only 2% of its population was economically poor⁵¹. The government was a pro-poor one in which the government introduced various schemes of social welfare programs that support the poor with medical services and subsistence assistance that results in relatively low-income inequality among Koreans⁵².

The other very critical issue for the development of South Korea is education. The country's educational system is one of the best in the world

⁴⁶ Lee, J.-W., *Economic growth and human development in the Republic of Korea, 1945-1992*. UNDP, Human Development Office, Occasional Paper 24, 1997.

⁴⁷ World Bank, *Republic of Korea: Four decades of equitable growth. A case study from Scaling up poverty reduction: A global learning process and conference*, Shanghai, May 25-27, 2004b.

⁴⁸ World Bank, *World Development Indicators*, 2006. Online database.

⁴⁹ Noland, M. and Pack, H., *Industrial policy in an era of globalization: Lessons from Asia*. Institute for International Economics, Washington D.C., 2003.

⁵⁰ Lee, J.-W., *Economic growth and human development in the Republic of Korea, 1945-1992*. UNDP, Human Development Office, Occasional Paper 24, 1997.

⁵¹ World Bank, *World Development Indicators 2004*, 2004a. CD-ROM.

⁵² World Bank, *Republic of Korea: Four decades of equitable growth. A case study from Scaling up poverty reduction: A global learning process and conference*, Shanghai, May 25-27, 2004b.

in which the government invests a lot on the development of the country's educational sector in terms of human development, expansion of the school to avoid illiteracy rate and so on. Currently, South Korea is the third biggest economy in the Asian continent following China and Japan and is the biggest one from the four (4) Tigers⁵³.

1.4. The notion of “Industrial Park”

The concept of Industrial Park (IP) is related to the development of industrialization and the emergence of the Industrial Revolution in the 18th century in England. And, IPs can be any of the following types: Science & Technology Park, Research Park, Eco-industrial Park or Export Processing Zone, Free Trade Zone; Private or Public-Private Partnership; "Brown if the park is established on already existing but disused facilities of former companies or 'green' if developed in a new area" and so on based on park specialization, ownership and land.

So, what is an Industrial Park? It is hard to find out a single definition to the term. For instance, the United Nations Industrial Development Organization (UNIDO) broadly defines IPs as: “policy instruments for industrialization and urbanization”⁵⁴. On the other hand, in Ethiopia's case, the FDRE Industrial Parks Proclamation No. 886/2015 defines Industrial park as follows:

"Industrial Park means an area with a distinct boundary designated by the appropriate organ to develop comprehensive, integrated, multiple or selected functions of industries, based on a planned fulfilment of infrastructure and various services such as road, electric power and water, one-stop-shop and have special incentive schemes, with a broad view to achieving planned and systematic, development of industries, mitigation of impacts of pollution on the environment and human being and development of urban centres, and includes special economic zones, technology parks, export processing zones, agro-processing zone, free trade zones and the like designated by the Investment Board⁵⁵."

Historically, the first IPs were established in the early 1970s operating with government financial and material support mainly focusing on service

⁵³ Avalos, H.R.B., *The Industry oriented Asian Tigers and the Natural Resource-based Pacific Alliance Economic Growth Models*, 2013. <https://mpira.ub.uni-muenchen.de/61665/>

⁵⁴ Türk, E., *An Evaluation of Industrial Park Policy of Turkey: Izmir as a Case Study*, 42nd IsoCaRP Congress, 2006.

⁵⁵ FDRE Industrial Parks Proclamation No. 886/2015.

delivery while the IPs in the late 1970s and 80's up-to-date are focusing on science, technology and business⁵⁶.

There is no such thing called "one-size-fits-all model" of industrial parks. Countries may consider various issues like the environment, culture, population, unemployment, natural resources, geographical location, infrastructure, access to market, financing and so on⁵⁷.

Countries especially in the East Asian Developmental States, commonly known as the "Asian Tigers," intensively invest in the development of Industrial Parks and have successfully used them "as a platform to attract foreign direct investment (FDI), especially in the manufacturing sector⁵⁸. And, Ethiopia is trying to portray this trend of Asian Tigers, and the development of IPs in Ethiopia is increasing from time to time. Currently, there are about 24 IPs developed/developing by federal (16 IPs) & regional (4 IPs) governments and private investment groups (4 IPs) in various parts of Ethiopia⁵⁹.

Table 2. List of Industrial Parks in Ethiopia

S/N	Name of Parks	Site & Location From Addis Ababa	Land size in hectare	Clusters	Developed and/or owned by
1	Bole Lemi I	Addis Ababa	156	Apparel	Federal
2	Bole Lemi II	Addis Ababa	170	Textile & Apparel	Federal
3	Kilinto	Addis Ababa	279	Food Processing, Pharmaceuticals, House appliance, electronics and Electrical	Federal
4	Hawassa	SNNPR, South 275 Km	400	Textile & Apparel	Federal
5	Dire Dawa	Dire Dawa, East 445 Km	4000	Textile & Apparel, Food	Federal

⁵⁶ World Bank Group, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2015. Available online on the following link: URL: <http://www.worldbank.org/en/country/ethiopia>

⁵⁷ Weldesilassie, A., & et al., *Study on Industrial Park Development: Issues, Practices and Lessons for Ethiopia*. Ethiopian Development Research Institute. Research Report 29. Addis Ababa, Ethiopia, 2017.

⁵⁸ World Bank Group, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2015. Available online on the following link: URL: <http://www.worldbank.org/en/country/ethiopia>

⁵⁹ Zhang, X., et al., *Industrial park development in Ethiopia: Case study report*. Department of Policy, Research and Statistics Working Paper 21/2018. United Nations Industrial Development Organization. Vienna, 2018.

				Processing, Assembly	
6	Kombolcha	Amhara, North-East 363 Km	750	Textile & Apparel, Food processing	Federal
7	Mekelle	Tigray, North 760 Km	1000	Textile & Apparel, Food Processing, Assembly	Federal
8	Adama	Oromia, South East 74 Km	2000	Textile & Apparel, Food Processing	Federal
9	Bahirdar	North-West 578 Km	1000	Textile & Apparel, Food Processing	Federal
10	Jimma	South-West 346 Km	1000	Textile & Apparel, Food Processing	Federal
11	Eastern Industry Zone	Oromia, Dukem, 35 Km	500	Chinese Companies	Private
12	Arete	Amhara, 105 km		Construction products, home appliances	Federal
13	Aysha	Somali, 620 km		-	Federal
14	Debre Birhan	Amhara 130 km		-	Federal
15	Huajian Group	Addis Ababa	138	Shoes	Private
16	Mojo George Shoe	Oromia, 74 km	50	Leather	Private
17	Airlines and Logistics	Addis Ababa	200	Transportation	Federal
18	Kingdom Linen	Dire Dawa, 515 km	-	Linen	Private
19	Bure Integrated agro	Amhara	154.99	Agri product processing	Regional
20	Bulbula Integrated agro	Oromia	263	Agri product processing	Regional
21	Yirgalem Integrated agro	SNNPR	108.8	Agri product processing	Regional

22	Baker Integrated agro	Tigray	150.92	Agri product processing	Regional
23	Modjo Leather City	Oromia	-	Leather	Federal
24	Addis Industrial Village 5	Addis Ababa	80	-	Federal

Source: ⁶⁰ & authors' compilation.

1.5. Why Industrial Park: Rationale and Relevance to Ethiopia

Ethiopia has been developing economic and development policies beginning from the Imperial period. All aims to change the economy of the state from agrarian to an industrial-based one. But, still, the economy is mainly agrarian-based one. That's why the government which is in power as of May 1991 has made a radical switch from the "failed IMF/WB sponsored economic policies" that didn't help the country transform its economy and reduce the level of poverty to a developmental state ideology where the government is another great actor in the economy. The ideology assumes that in neo-liberalism since the main and only actor in the economy is the private sector where the government has no/little role in the market, there is a risk of "market failure" so that the intervention of the state in the market is needed. One of the intervention mechanisms in the development of Industrial parks.

Ethiopia has described the necessity of establishing industrial parks in different parts of the country via a Proclamation No.886/2015. This proclamation clarifies/defines what an Industry park is; its purpose and type accordingly in its first part (see part one of the proclamation subsection 2(1)). The proclamation stated that:

"...[I]t is necessary to accelerate the economic transformation and development of the country through the establishment of Industrial Parks in strategic locations to promote and attract productive domestic and foreign direct investment thereby upgrading industries and generate employment opportunity;...the need to enhance the export promotion, protection of the environment and human wellbeing, economical land use

⁶⁰ Africa Business Partners., *List of industrial zone in Ethiopia (as of February 2017)*, (May 6, 2017). Accessed from the following online link. URL: http://africabusinesspartners.com/perspectives/business/list_of_industrial_zone_in_et_hiopia.html Accessed on 21/01/2018; Zhang, X., et al., *Industrial park development in Ethiopia: Case study report*. Department of Policy, Research and Statistics Working Paper 21/2018. United Nations Industrial Development Organization, Vienna, 2018.

and establishing and expanding planned urban centres...⁶¹

Industrial parks are key for transforming Ethiopia's economy from agriculture led to manufacturing-led one. Plus, IPs create employment opportunity, earn hard currency through exporting, expanding urbanization and using resources like land efficiently and effectively. So far, all IPs in Ethiopia created about 60,000 jobs⁶².

Besides, the Ethiopian Industrial Parks Development Corporation (IPDC) was established in 2014 with the duty of developing various IPs dealing with their economic importance and avail developed lands with all the necessary infrastructure, services and facilities like power, water, clinic, residence, shipping, security, custom offices etc... to investors⁶³.

Furthermore, what the Ethiopian government wants to do with the IPs and the priority areas for FDIs that:

“The IPs in Ethiopia aim to address the market failures related to land access, infrastructure, and logistics costs, as well as the high costs of doing business... The IP strategy in Ethiopia hinges on attracting FDI in the export-led and labour-intensive manufacturing sector... prioritizing FDI in specific sectors: textile and apparel, leather and leather products, agro-processing, and pharmaceuticals and chemicals⁶⁴.”

Ethiopia is open for any investor regardless of his citizenship whether he is domestic or foreign investor who is willing to invest his/her fortune in the development of industrial parks. And, the country has been successful in attracting foreign direct investments following the introduction of the development of industrial parks in various part of the country. For instance, Ethiopia has attracted about 1.2 Billion USD FDI in 2014 with an average growth of 2.7% per annum, and the country ranks second next to South Africa in the sub-Sahara in attracting FDIs⁶⁵.

⁶¹ FDRE Industrial Parks Proclamation No. 886/2015.

⁶² ENA, የውጭ ኩባንያዎች የኢንዱስትሪ ፓርክ ልማት ተሳትፎ እየጨመረ ነው ተባለ, October 2/2011 URL: <https://www.ena.et/?p=21517> accessed on October 13/2018.

⁶³ Mihretu, M.E., and Llobet, G., *Looking Beyond the Horizon: A case study of PVH's commitment to Ethiopia's Hawassa Industrial Park*. World Bank Group, 2017.

⁶⁴ World Bank, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2017. (accessed on 11/08/2018 from URL: <http://webcache.googleusercontent.com/search?q=cache:tU5PxWo2BQgJ:documents.worldbank.org/curated/en/827261468190142554/pdf/97916-REVISED-Box393200B-PUBLIC-Ethiopia-Economic-Update-4th-Edition-v-web.pdf+&cd=1&hl=am&ct=clnk&gl=et&client=opera>).

⁶⁵ Daba, B., & Mulu, F., *Incorporating “Democratic Developmental State Ideology” into Ethiopia's Ethnic Federalism—A Contradiction?* Üniversitepark Bültten, 6(1), 109-117, 2017.

1.6. An overview of Ethiopia's Economy: focus on the performance of some selected (sub) sectors in the GTP I (2010/11-14/15)

The country is a home for about 80 ethnic groups and a population of about 110 million⁶⁶. Ethiopia has Gross Domestic Product (GDP) of about USD 56.1 Billion, which is one of the top ten African's economies with about 16.8 % unemployment rate⁶⁷. Ethiopia is one of the poorest countries in the world. Ethiopia's GDP per capita Income is 767.6 USD⁶⁸. The country is still largely an agrarian state where agriculture constitutes most of the country's economy, and about 80% of the population is living in the rural areas⁶⁹. Coffee is the main export crop. Agriculture creates more jobs than the other sectors in the country. The sector is suffering from the change of weather and continuous drought.

In Ethiopia, the agriculture and service sectors are key sectors to the overall amount of the total Gross Domestic Product of Ethiopia which constitute about 47% and 42.2% respectively while the manufacturing sector only constitutes about 10.8 % to the GDP⁷⁰. This indicates despite the government gives priority to the manufacturing sector, still, the sector is underdeveloped, and would take a longer time to be in what the government wishes to be.

The share of the manufacturing/industry sector in Ethiopia's economy, for instance, was far better in the imperial period than in the Dergue regime. For instance, 1974 it was about 15.2% of the country GDP while it sharply declined to 13.6% in 1989 due to civil war in the country⁷¹.

⁶⁶ Gebremariam, F.M., and Feyissa, B.D., *The role of Democratic Developmental State for National Integration: An assessment from the perspective of the 1995 Federal Democratic Republic of Ethiopia Constitution*. Research and Science Today (RST), No2 (14), 2017.

⁶⁷ World Bank Group, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2015. Available online on the following link: URL: <http://www.worldbank.org/en/country/ethiopia>

⁶⁸ World Bank, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2017. (accessed on 11/08/2018 from URL:

<http://webcache.googleusercontent.com/search?q=cache:tU5PxWo2BQgJ:documents.worldbank.org/curated/en/827261468190142554/pdf/97916-REVISED-Box393200B-PUBLIC-Ethiopia-Economic-Update-4th-Edition-v-web.pdf+&cd=1&hl=am&ct=clnk&gl=et&client=opera>.

⁶⁹ Gebremaraiaam, F.M., Admas, E., and Teha, K., *The Performance of Condominium Housing Program in Jimma town, Ethiopia: A Case Study*. Annals of the University of Craiova for Journalism, Communication and Management. Volume 3:5-31, 2017.

⁷⁰ World Bank Group, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2015. Available online on the following link: URL: <http://www.worldbank.org/en/country/ethiopia>

⁷¹ Alemayehu, T., *The Ethiopian developmental state: requirements and perquisites*. Journal of Business & Economics Research, 7(8), 11-18, 2009.

Ethiopia is well-known for its Coffee Arabica export which is the only country in Africa and 5th in the world, and the second flower exporter in Africa but ranks first in honey and beeswax production. Plus, it is also the first with the number of cattle in Africa. This indicates the country has a large economic potential in the agricultural sector⁷².

Three-fourths of the GDP growth of Ethiopia in 2013/14 is from the agriculture, construction and service sectors. The agricultural sector grows about 8.2% better than what is around 6.2% in 2012/13 while the construction sector grows at 36% in 2013/14 which accounts for about 81% for the manufacturing sector in the budget year. The service sector mainly trade, hotel sub-sectors increased by 17%; and the transport and communication sector also grows at about 13.30% in 2013/14⁷³.

Despite the share of agriculture is decreasing, it is still the main economic sector in the state. It decreases from 56% of the GDP in the 1980s to 46% of GDP in 2018. Mining is also a critical sector especially in bringing hard currency, and in 2012, “mining contributed 1.6% to GDP, and just under 10% to export revenues”⁷⁴. But, the GTPI and GTP II aim to increase the total output of mining to 10%. The monetary and financial sectors are also growing well.

The implementation period of the GTP I, the agriculture sector grows in average rate of 6.6% per annum despite what is targeted about 8% per annum. Besides, the share of the sector to GDP was about 42% at the beginning of the first GTP (2009/10) which later declined to about 39% by the end of the GTP I (2014/15). Plus, the GTP I targeted by the end of the plan, the country will generate about 1.5 Billion USD from the export of flowers, vegetables and fruits per annum, but only 249.7 million USD (16.6%) what is planned was collected⁷⁵.

⁷² Ethiopian Investment Commission. *An Investment Guide to Ethiopia: Ethiopia – A Preferred Investment Destination in Africa*, 2017. Available on URL: <https://isid.unido.org/files/ForumAIFE2/1.%20AN%20INVESTMENT%20GUIDE%20TO%20ETHIOPIA.pdf> Accessed on 14/10/2018.

⁷³ World Bank, *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, 2017. (accessed on 11/08/2018 from URL:

<http://webcache.googleusercontent.com/search?q=cache:tU5PxWo2BQgJ:documents.worldbank.org/curated/en/827261468190142554/pdf/97916-REVISED-Box393200B-PUBLIC-Ethiopia-Economic-Update-4th-Edition-v-web.pdf+&cd=1&hl=am&ct=clnk&gl=et&client=opera>.

⁷⁴ Deloitte., *Ethiopia's growth miracle*, 2018. (Also available on the following URL link: <https://www2.deloitte.com/za/en/pages/.../ethiopia-growth-miracle.html> Accessed on 10/10/2018).

⁷⁵ National Planning Commission of the Federal Democratic Republic of Ethiopia, *Growth and Transformation Plan II (GTP II) (2015/16-2019/20)*. Volume I: Main Text, 2016. (It is accessible on the following link URL:

Similarly, the manufacturing industrial sector witnessed an average growth rate of 20% per annum in the implementation period of the GTPI.

At the end of GTP I, the plan targeted that the overall share of the industrial sector to GDP will be about 18.8% despite the actual share was 15.1% (manufacturing 4.8%, construction 8.5%, electric and water 1.0% and mining 0.8%). However, the manufacturing sectors' role in bringing hard currency was too weak. For instance, the GTPI targeted to Ethiopia will earn about 1.82 billion USD in 2014/15 while the performance was only 22.5% (USD 409 million)⁷⁶.

The other key sub-sector is construction. This sector, during the GTP I period, grows on average 28.7% per annum and increases its share GDP from 4% in 2009/10 to 8.5% in 2014/15.

Besides, Ethiopia's GDP grows at an average rate of 10.9 per cent in the FY 2017 which is higher than what was in average (10.3%) growth per annum 2005/06–2015/16 due to a recovery in agricultural production after 2016 drought, and far better from what was in 2016 FY (8%). However, even the GTP II, the country's export sector didn't perform well like the GTP I. It didn't exceed 10% of the GDP share. Inflation rate was also at a single digit in the FY 2017⁷⁷.

The industrial, service and agricultural sectors were key to the GDP of Ethiopia.

"... [From supply side], Growth has been driven by the industrial sector with a 4.4 per cent contribution to growth, followed by the services sector contributing 4 per cent, and agriculture contributing 2.5 per cent. Construction contributed 3.5 per cent to the overall GDP growth⁷⁸."

[https://dagethiopia.org/new/images/DAG_DOCS/GTP2_English_Translation_Fin al_June_21_2016.pdf](https://dagethiopia.org/new/images/DAG_DOCS/GTP2_English_Translation_Fin_al_June_21_2016.pdf).

⁷⁶ *Ibidem*.

⁷⁷ World Bank, *GDP per Capita of Ethiopia (current US\$)*, 2018. (Available at <https://data.worldbank.org/indicator/NY.GDP.PCAP.CD>. Accessed on 06/10/2018).

⁷⁸ *Ibidem*.

Table 3. Contribution to Ethiopia's GDP development per industry manufacturing sector from FY2013/14-2019/20

Manufacturing sub-sector	2013/14	2014/15	2015/16	2016/17	2017/18	2018/19	2019/20
Textile & garment	0.111	0.137	0.165	0.244	0.402	0.605	1.000
Leather & Leather products	0.133	0.160	0.185	0.300	0.400	0.600	0.800
Meat, Meat products & honey	0.076	0.084	0.125	0.230	0.292	0.376	0.470
Food and beverage	0.065	0.115	0.120	0.222	0.281	0.360	0.450
Sugar	-	-	0.387	0.567	0.716	0.927	1.200
Chemical & Construction Inputs	0.011	0.020	0.027	0.049	0.062	0.080	0.100
Pharmaceuticals	-	0.015	0.029	0.054	0.068	0.088	0.110
Metal engineering Industries	0.002	0.019	0.044	0.065	0.110	0.200	0.342
Electric and electronics products	-	-	0.050	0.063	0.088	0.139	0.185
Total	0.398	0.544	1.075	1.794	2.419	3.375	4.657

Source⁷⁹

1.7. A New Approach to Economic Transformation: The Development of Industrial Parks in Ethiopia

In the early 2000s, EPRDF under the leadership of the late Prime Minister Meles Zenawi, Ethiopia has introduced a new political and economic ideology called “Democratic Developmental state Ideology” where the state is the other main actor in the market in addition to the private sector⁸⁰. The government never intervenes in the activities that the private sector can handle, rather in the activities that the private sector unable/not willing to invest⁸¹ because it is risky, or demands more capital or investor shall wait for so long to see the fruit of their investment works. Thus, the government is not a “night watchman” in the economy, rather the government is very key actor in the market so that there will not be a market gap in the economy.

⁷⁹ COLOFON, *Business Opportunity Report Ethiopia: Textile & Apparel Industry*, nd. (URL: https://www.rvo.nl/sites/default/files/.../Rapport_Textile_Ethiopië.pdf. Accessed on 11/10/2018).

⁸⁰ Daba, B., & Mulu, F., *Incorporating “Democratic Developmental State Ideology” into Ethiopia's Ethnic Federalism—A Contradiction?* Üniversitepark Bültten, 6(1), 109-117, 2017.

⁸¹ Mulu, F., & Daba, B., *In defence of Ethiopia's adoption of “Democratic Developmental State”—Issues and Challenges*. Üniversitepark Bültten, 6(2), 66-73, 2017.

Ethiopia's adoption of new economic ideology, clearly indicates that the country is adopting an experience of the East Asian countries usually called the "Asian Tigers"⁸². As the economic history of Taiwan, Singapore, South Korea and Hong Kong indicates that all these countries follow the shortest path to economic development were in less than 40-50 years, the countries have changed their economic histories. For instance, in the 1950s South Korea's economy was not better than the then Ethiopian economy⁸³. But, within a generation or two, South Korea has become one of the most developed and industrialized countries in the world. The same is true to the other Asian tigers. This attracted the attention of the late Prime Minister of Ethiopia Meles Zenawi, and he began to openly criticise the neo-liberalist ideology as if it does not help developing countries to reduce poverty. He clearly stated it in his work "African Development: the Dead Ends and the New Beginnings," and argues it is a democratic developmental state, not neoliberalism that would lift third world countries out of poverty⁸⁴.

While Meles Zenawi prefers the developmental path of the East Asian countries, he didn't just copy and paste it into Ethiopia. Rather, he tried to consider the Ethiopian case. Then, he argued that the developmental state ideology in the East Asian countries was executed under strong autocratic leadership where it will not work in Ethiopia. In this case, Meles rather argued that a developmental state could be democratic. Plus, after he investigated the economic history of the four Asian Tigers, he argued that it is the South Korean and Taiwanese case preferable to Ethiopia. Since most of the population in the country are agrarian while in Singapore and Hong Kong more or less the population lives in the urban area which is not the case in Ethiopia.

Plus, there is also a favourable condition to implement developmental state in Ethiopia since the government is more or less from the influence of the private sector, and the government has a strong base of the rural areas, and the government controls most of the economy⁸⁵.

Developmental state labels "poverty" as "the worst enemy" of the state, and avoiding poverty by any means necessary is the only means to survive

⁸² Gebremariam, MA. F.M. & Bayu, MA.A.M., *Ethiopia: A Democratic Developmental State?* ILIRIA International Review – Vol 7, No 2, pp. 153-170, 2017.

⁸³ Gebreeyesus, M., *Industrial policy and development in Ethiopia: Evolution and present experimentation. Learning to Compete*, Working paper 6, 2013.

⁸⁴ Zenawi, M., *African Development: Dead Ends and New Beginnings*, 2006. Preliminary draft.

⁸⁵ Atlaw, D., *Promising democratic developmental state in Africa: Evidence from Ethiopia*. International Journal of Educational Research and Development Vol. 2 No.7, pp. 168-177, 2013.

as a state and society⁸⁶. The same is true in Ethiopia. The government continuously used to say the utmost target of the government is to avoid poverty and to realize a fastest sustainable economic growth to become one of the middle-income countries in the world by 2025⁸⁷.

Recent figures indicate that there are about 24 industrial parks in Ethiopia to attract FDIs, earn hard currency, transferring technology to local firms and individuals, and create thousands of job opportunity for Ethiopians. Ethiopians already began to experience the fruits of Meles Zenawi's economic policy. Ethiopia has become one of the fastest-growing economies in the world for more than a decade, plus, it is now the biggest economy in the East African region⁸⁸. Meles proves he was right in adopting the ideology despite there are some criticism regarding corruption, human right violations and installing the ideology without first establish enable institutional capacity and technocrats⁸⁹.

1.8. Conclusion

The FDRE government in 2010/11 has introduced an ambitious development plan, GTP I, to be executed until 2014/15 aims to transform the state economy from an agricultural led to a manufacturing industry-led economy. The plan, thus, calls the need for the construction of various Industrial Parks in different parts of the country so that the country will attract FDIs sustainably. The plan also calls for huge investment to be made on the development of industrial parks both by the government at large, and the private sector could be domestic or foreign, in which the parks will be constructed giving more emphasis to garment and textile, chemical and metal, pharmaceutical and apparel. The government believes that huge investment of the manufacturing sector with various incentives for investors including tax holidays, free import and avoiding quota barriers would make the country best destination for foreign investors⁹⁰. The manufacturing sector will create several job opportunities for youth

⁸⁶ Kefale, A., *Narratives of Developmentalism and Development in Ethiopia: Some preliminary explorations*, 2011.

⁸⁷ Dejene, T., *The Emergence of Democratic Developmental States in Africa: The Ethiopian Experience*, n.d.

⁸⁸ Mulu, F., & Daba, B., *In defence of Ethiopia's adoption of "Democratic Developmental State"— Issues and Challenges*. Üniversitepark Bültlen, 6(2), 66-73, 2017.

⁸⁹ *Ibidem*.

⁹⁰ Weldesilassie, A., & et al., *Study on Industrial Park Development: Issues, Practices and Lessons for Ethiopia*. Ethiopian Development Research Institute. Research Report 29. Addis Ababa, Ethiopia, 2017.

and local people, and help to accommodate the growing unemployed urban population, in particular⁹¹.

Through several trials and error, the government has been able to experience to some extent a meaningful change in the manufacturing sector and able to show some improvement in changing the share of the manufacturing sector about the agricultural sector to the total GDP of the state which is now about 45% of the GDP in 2019/20FY. The government after employing the so-called developmental state ideology, Ethiopia has been one of the fastest-growing economies in the world⁹². Thus, if the government is able to solve some of the hindrances to the policy like the absence of skilled manpower, shortage of capital, lack of available infrastructure, corruption and so on so that the state for sure can be changed and be one of the middle-income countries shortly if not as the government envisages by 2025.

References

Africa Business Partners, *List of industrial zone in Ethiopia (as of February 2017)*, (May 6, 2017). Accessed from the following online link. URL:

http://africabusinesspartners.com/perspectives/business/list_of_industrial_zone_in_ethiopia.html Accessed on 21/01/2018.

Alemayehu, T., (2009), *The Ethiopian developmental state: requirements and perquisites*. Journal of Business & Economics Research, 7(8), 11-18.

Altenburg, T., (2010), *Industrial policy in Ethiopia. Discussion Paper / Deutsches Institut für Entwicklungspolitik*. ISBN 978-3-88985-477-3.

Altenburg, T., (2011), *Industrial policy in developing countries, overview and lessons from seven country cases*. Discussion Paper 4/2011. German Development Institute, Bonn. Available at: https://www.die-gdi.de/uploads/media/DP_4.2011.pdf.

Atlaw, D., (2013), *Promising democratic developmental state in Africa: Evidence from Ethiopia*. International Journal of Educational Research and Development Vol. 2 No.7, pp. 168-177.

⁹¹, Gebretensae, M., *The Challenges and Prospects of Building a Developmental State in Africa: A Comparative Study of Botswana and Ethiopia* (Unpublished Master's Thesis). Addis Ababa University, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia, 2015.

⁹² Daba, B., & Mulu, F., *Incorporating "Democratic Developmental State Ideology" into Ethiopia's Ethnic Federalism—A Contradiction?* Üniversitepark Bültlen, 6(1), 109-117, 2017.

Ash, R., & a Green, M., (2007), *Taiwan in the 21st Century*. Routledge, New York. ISBN10: 0-415-41256-0. ISBN13: 978-0-415-41256-8.

Avalos, H. R. B., (2013), *The Industry oriented Asian Tigers and the Natural Resource-based Pacific Alliance Economic Growth Models*. <https://mpira.ub.uni-muenchen.de/61665/>

Castel-Branco, C., (1996), *What are the major lessons from East Asian Development Experience?* (Also available on the following URL link: www.iese.ac.mz/lib/.../Lesson%20from%20East%20Asia%20002.pdf Accessed on 14/10/2018).

COLOFON, (n.d.). *Business Opportunity Report Ethiopia: Textile & Apparel Industry*. (URL: https://www.rvo.nl/sites/default/files/.../Rapport_Textile_Ethiopië.pdf Accessed on 11/10/2018).

Cornwall, J., (1977), *Modern Capitalism. Its Growth and Transformation*, New York: St. Martin's Press.

Daba, B., & Mulu, F., (2017), *Incorporating “Democratic Developmental State Ideology” into Ethiopia’s Ethnic Federalism—A Contradiction?* *Üniversitepark Bülten*, 6(1), 109- 117.

Dejene, T., (n.d.). *The Emergence of Democratic Developmental States in Africa: The Ethiopian Experience.*

Deloitte, (2018), *Ethiopia’s growth miracle*. (Also available on the following URL link: <https://www2.deloitte.com/za/en/pages/.../ethiopia-growth-miracle.html> Accessed on 10/10/2018).

ENA, (October 2/2011). *የውጭ ኩባንያዎች የኢንዱስትሪ ፓርክ ልማት ተሳትፎ እየጨመረ ነው ተባለ*, October 2/2011 URL: <https://www.ena.et/?p=21517> , accessed on October 13/2018.

Ethiopian Investment Commission, (2017), *An Investment Guide to Ethiopia: Ethiopia – A Preferred Investment Destination in Africa*. Accessed on October 14th, 2018 from URL:

<https://isid.unido.org/files/ForumAIFE2/1.%20AN%20INVESTMENT%20GUIDE%20TO%20ETHIOPIA.pdf>.

FDRE Council of Ministers, (2017). *Industrial Parks Council of Ministers Regulations No. 417/2017*.

FDRE Industrial Parks Proclamation No. 886/2015.

Gebreeyesus, M., (2013), *Industrial policy and development in Ethiopia: Evolution and present experimentation. Learning to Compete, Working paper 6*.

Gebremaraïam, F. M., Admas, E., and Teha, K., (2017), *The Performance of Condominium Housing Program in Jimma town, Ethiopia: A Case Study*. *Annals of the University of Craiova for Journalism, Communication and Management*. Volume 3:5-31.

Gebremariam, F.M., and Feyissa, B.D., (2017), *The role of Democratic Developmental State for National Integration: An assessment from the perspective of the 1995 Federal Democratic Republic of Ethiopia Constitution*. Research and Science Today (RST), No2 (14).

Gebremariam, MA. F.M. & Bayu, MA. A.M., (2017), *Ethiopia: A Democratic Developmental State?* ILIRIA International Review – Vol 7, No 2, PP: 153-170.

Gebretensae, M., (2015), *The Challenges and Prospects of Building a Developmental State in Africa: A Comparative Study of Botswana and Ethiopia* (Unpublished Master's Thesis). Addis Ababa University, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia.

Henderson, J., & et al., (2002), *Economic governance and poverty reduction in South Korea*.

Ito, K., (2012), *Sources of Learning by Exporting Effects. Does Exports Promote Innovation?* Economic Research Institute for ASEAN and East Asia (ERIA). Discussion Paper Series. Senshu University, School of Economics. June 2012.

Kaldor, N., (1967), *Strategic Factors in Economic Development*, Ithaca: Cornell University.

Kefale, A., (2011), *Narratives of Developmentalism and Development in Ethiopia: Some preliminary explorations.*"

Lee, J.-W., (1997), *Economic growth and human development in the Republic of Korea, 1945-1992*. UNDP, Human Development Office, Occasional Paper 24.

Leys, C., (1996), *The Rise and Fall of Development Theory*. Oxford, James Currey.

Liu, S., (1998), *Industrial Development and Structural Adaptation in Taiwan: Some Issues of Learned Entrepreneurship*. Iee transactions on engineering management. vol. 45 (4).

Mbate, M., (2016), *Structural change and industrial policy: A case study of Ethiopia's leather sector*. Journal of African Trade 3 (2016) 85–100.

Mihretu, M.E., and Llobet, G., (2017), *Looking Beyond the Horizon: A case study of PVH's commitment to Ethiopia's Hawassa Industrial Park*. World Bank Group.

Mulu, F., & Daba, B., (2017), *In defence of Ethiopia's adoption of "Democratic Developmental State"– Issues and Challenges*. Üniversitepark Bülten, 6(2), 66-73.

National Planning Commission of the Federal Democratic Republic of Ethiopia, (2016). *Growth and Transformation Plan II (GTP II) (2015/16-2019/20)*. Volume I: Main Text. URL:

- https://dagethiopia.org/new/images/DAG_DOCS/GTP2_English_Translation_Final_June_21_2016.pdf accessed on 21/05/2019).
- Noland, M. and Pack, H., (2003), *Industrial policy in an era of globalization: Lessons from Asia*. Institute for International Economics, Washington D.C.
- Nzau, M., (2010), *Africa's Industrialization Debate: A Critical Analysis*. The Journal of Language, Technology & Entrepreneurship in Africa, Vol. 2. No.1, ISSN 1998-1279.
- Park, J. H., (2002), *The East Asian Model of Economic Development and Developing Countries*. Journal of Developing Societies Vol 4(18): 330-53.
- Türk, E., (2006), *An Evaluation of Industrial Park Policy of Turkey: Izmir as a Case Study*, 42nd IsoCaRP Congress.
- Weldesilassie, A., & et al., (2017), *Study on Industrial Park Development: Issues, Practices and Lessons for Ethiopia*. Ethiopian Development Research Institute. Research Report 29. Addis Ababa, Ethiopia.
- World Bank, (2018), *GDP per capita of Ethiopia (current US\$)*. (Available at <https://data.worldbank.org/indicator/NY.GDP.PCAP.CD>. Accessed on 06/10/2018).
- World Bank, (2017). *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*, (accessed on 8th of November, 2018 from URL: <http://webcache.googleusercontent.com/search?q=cache:tU5PxWo2BQgJ:documents.worldbank.org/curated/en/827261468190142554/pdf/97916-REVISED-Box393200B-PUBLIC-Ethiopia-Economic-Update-4th-Edition-v-web.pdf+&cd=1&hl=am&ct=clnk&gl=et&client=opera>).
- World Bank Group, (2015). *4th Ethiopia Economic Update: Overcoming Constraints in the Manufacturing Sector*. (Also available online on URL: <http://www.worldbank.org/en/country/ethiopia>).
- World Bank, (2013), *World Development Indicators*. DataBase. www.worldbank.org.
- World Bank, (2006), *World Development Indicators*. Online database.
- World Bank, (2004a), *World Development Indicators 2004*. CD-ROM.
- World Bank, (2004b). *Republic of Korea: Four decades of equitable growth. A case study from Scaling up poverty reduction: A global learning process and conference*, Shanghai, May 25-27.
- Wu, T., (2004). *Economic History of Taiwan: A Survey*. (Accessed on 11/10/2018 from URL:

<https://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/pdf/10.1111/j.1467-8446.2004.00123.x>).

Zenawi, M., (2006), *African Development: Dead Ends and New Beginnings* Preliminary draft.

Zhang, X., et al., (2018), *Industrial park development in Ethiopia: Case study report*. Department of Policy, Research and Statistics Working Paper 21/2018. United Nations Industrial Development Organization. Vienna.

Acknowledgements

First and above all, glory and praise to God for giving us good health, and the energy and strength to conduct this research. Our special thanks shall go to Jimma University for sponsoring us financially to conduct this joint research.

THE INFLUENCE OF ATYPICAL SITUATIONS AT MACROECONOMIC LEVEL IN REPUBLIC OF MOLDOVA: CASE STUDY

Lilia Sargu*

lsargu@mail.ru

Abstract: *The emergence of specific elements - economic activity and unusual action that creates new conditions for conducting them is becoming increasingly common in Moldova. While diversifying castor varieties of actions is more difficult to define them. In these circumstances, the need to study their influential capacity depending on the appearance and severity of the consequences created is not only her current situation, but a new research direction. The author of this research consisted necessity and appropriate case study involving scientists in marketing and management in supporting and providing an undisputed professionalism of scientific environment. The fact that scientific research initiated approaches a new direction of the management and marketing of atypical situations in macroeconomic conditions requiring consultation with the school superior in clarifying assumptions submitted by the researcher and involving actual formation vision correct the factors of influence of atypical situations arise where present in Moldova. Research shows a study conducted by experts to identify factors influence forming atypical situations in terms of macroeconomic activity in Moldova. Expected results found most important factor creates ice Tomb atypical situations present in Moldova,*

Keywords: *atypical situations, influential factors, expert, phenomenon, macroeconomic level.*

Introduction

The scientific approach any economic phenomenon is based on research. Studying the phenomenon of atypical macroeconomic situation is a complex process that is strategic interaction management processes. Main argument in question constitutes research methods and techniques systemic approach in the context of basing any decisions. One method of marketing research in the context of market strategies selection method is the "expert opinion" that attracted the attention of researchers and has become a landmark in the investigations. Scientific substantiation belonged since ancient times schools, where they held philosophical or scientific discourse is called "reading room" and subsequently transformed

* *PhD., associate professor, Dean of Faculty of Economics, European University of Moldova, Chisinau, Republic of Moldova.*

into places of training excellence. In the contemporary period, high school reading took place scientific research and the starting point of new fundamental theoretical management approach. In theory foundation of new concepts in economics, management, marketing, etc. is the result of research the young generation of graduates of the doctoral school, through which the scientific world becomes richer disclosure, experiments, surveys, approaches, methods, etc. The performance of pupils, as in antiquity is guided and monitored by scientists of higher school teachers, who are at the helm and ensure the promotion of economic theories in economics theoretical value only as a result of fundamental research.

Atypical situation¹ being treated as any action which occurred in the economic activity as part of changed circumstances of the game and create conditions conducive to her both as an advantage and as a disadvantage for carrying out the process and achieve its purpose. Given that this kind of action catalyst can be used positively or negatively evident that there need to manage them by applying performance management. Such management by identifying atypical situations as branch management doctrine².

Particularities of atypical situation present in economic activity by applying management atypical situations can become a controlled action, and everything is controlled it can be easily manipulated in the direction desired.

Research purposes

Because scientific research in question deals with a new management and marketing direction atypical macroeconomic situation, the need to consult high school becomes a possibility argumentation research hypothesis, but a way of confirming the role in contemporary society. Calling the method expert author developed a form of consulting the expert's reasoning study the conditions required, which was supplemented by the 26 experts in management, marketing and finance within five higher education institutions in Moldova and Institute national Economic Research.

¹ Șargu L., *Management Functions In Atypical Situations*, in: Knowledge Horizons - Economics, Volume 11, Issue 3/2019, Bucharest, Romania, pp 52-61., 0.6 as E-ISSN: 2066-1061,

<http://orizonturi.ucdc.ro/arhiva/KHE%20nr.%203%20-%202019/x1.%20Knowledge%20Horizons%20-%20primele%20pagini.pdf>

² Șargu L., *Through the management of atypical Situations in quality management system: management, collective Monograph the innovative economic development intension*, Poland, June, pp. 198-208.

In this context the working hypothesis is to establish a correct vision on value appreciation factors influencing the formation of atypical macroeconomic situation in Moldova.

Methods used in research.

Background of the research of the author is based on a set of methods selected in conjunction with the hypothesis and the content of the research. The fund is a deductive research based on empirical data accumulation mode through a safety expert. For the experiment the sample was selected, its size and representativeness. The number of experts involved is 26, 5 and higher education institutions in the economic research institutions 1. As a method of data processing and analysis using traditional mathematical and statistical methods. The display of the graphs of the results is using.

Results and comments

Task Wizard: To evaluate a score as a scale from 1-5 components characteristic factors influence of atypical situations arising in the current macroeconomic Moldova and arranged in rank above. The value will be attributed to the intensity component, since the score given is bigger component is more likely to influence the formation factor.

Below are graphic representations of appraisals value characteristics influencing factors identified atypical situations macroeconomic vision of expertise involved in the study. Figure 1 presents policymakers assessments. It was characterised by the following: political bottlenecks, change of government, sharing areas of influence, lobbying, bureaucracy.

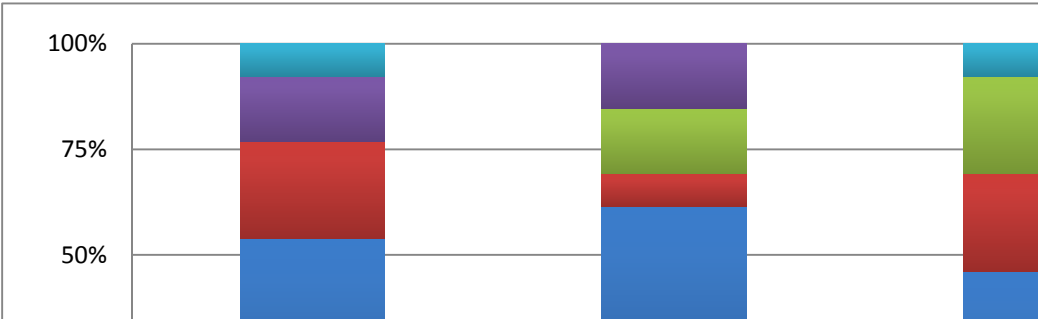


Figure 1. Average specific components for policymakers creating macroeconomic atypical situations

Source: prepared by the author based on expert analysis results sheet

Analysing the results of expertise in this field, we see that all four elements characteristic policymakers were mostly appreciated by about

50% percent of the maximum score (5 points), which confirms the paramount importance in the initiation address these factors. Regardless of the research expert (management, marketing, finance) opinion about the dangers of these factors it is one of solidarity. Obviously that lately Moldova has collided with the changing of government-wide legislative and executive from one pole to another doctrinal policy orientations. In the last 10 years Moldova had five parliamentary elections (in April 2009, July 2009, November 2010, November 2014 and February 2019) experts confirm the findings which confirm the estimate and the exchange of government with full marks. During this period the legislative and executive function were put under reorganisation, thus the same period the executive changed seven teams (in 2009 and 2015 by 2 per year). Each team is its own vision of economic development and their reshuffles and reforms in certain areas and branches of the national economy and continuity of these priorities are not taken from one government to another. In this period they were recorded and most representative macroeconomic atypical situations: bank fraud in the 2012-2014 period of the Savings Bank, Unibank and Bank Social; insuring debt Savings Bank with state guarantee and loss. The phenomenon of sharing areas of influence emerged in result of creating the Alliance for European Integration, which revealed the hidden interests of some members of the team for holding control of state structures worldwide that are independent and non-political structures. Also on this subject have appeared about buying some people with an interest or merging functions of public bodies, ministries, etc. to be more easily shared. Such special situations created by policymakers obviously not welcomed by civil society and the Moldovan people including evaluators, who have expressed views reflecting such factors as some of the most influential in creating situations atypical macroeconomic level which revealed the hidden interests of some members of the team for holding control of state structures worldwide that are independent and non-political structures. Also on this subject have appeared about buying some people with an interest or merging functions of public bodies, ministries, etc. to be more easily shared. Such special situations created by policymakers obviously not welcomed by civil society

and the Moldovan people including evaluators, who have expressed views reflecting such factors as some of the most influential in creating situations atypical macroeconomic level. Also on this subject have appeared about buying some people with an interest or merging functions of public bodies, ministries, etc. to be more easily shared. Such special situations created by policymakers obviously not welcomed by civil society and the Moldovan people including evaluators, who have expressed views reflecting such factors as some of the most influential in creating situations atypical macroeconomic level. Also on this subject have appeared about buying some people with an interest or merging functions of public bodies, ministries, etc. to be more easily shared. Such special situations created by policymakers obviously not welcomed by civil society and the Moldovan people including evaluators, who have expressed views reflecting such factors as some of the most influential in creating situations atypical macroeconomic level.

Evaluation of financial factors expressed by international transfers, inflation, remittances, investment and economic crisis were evaluated by experts as are represented in Figure 2.

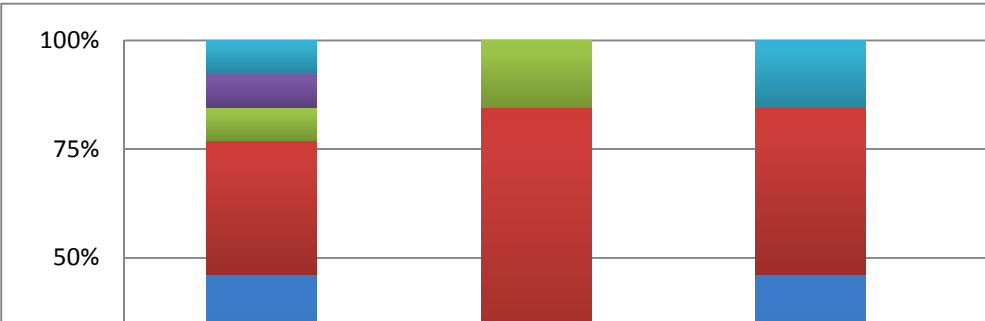


Figure 2. Evaluation of financial factors characteristics by experts

Source: prepared by author by analysing the expert sheet

Experts have gained a maximum score with a share of about 50% percent of five four characteristics: international transfers, remittances, investment and economic crises. It is obvious that the Moldovan economy is dependent on international loans and transfers Moldovan Government foreign assistance from the European Commission, World Bank, EIB, EBRD, IMF, etc. Moldova every year becomes increasingly dependent on these sources and phenomena and atypical situations created by policymakers, raises the risk factor dependency created external sources to be one that itself could cause atypical actually seized and found to by

suspending the end of 2018³ financial support from the European Commission for an indeterminate period.

According to the explanatory notes⁴ on the macroeconomic situation of Moldova presented by the Ministry of Infrastructure to show a performance of certain sectors of the economy affected by internal or external crises such as agriculture being negative records in 2012, 2015 and 2017; the industrial sector in the years 2016-2017; a negative influence to the manufacture of tobacco products, pharmaceutical products, dairy products, etc. 2018.

The value of remittances in Moldova is growing every year in the annual report⁵ of the National Bank in 2017 amounted to 1.55921 billion US dollars and 19.2% of GDP. The increase was due to increased flows in the EU and in other countries through currency inflows to individuals.

Investments in Moldova became independent, starting with the attraction for foreign investors, who have tried almost all fields of national economy. A special attraction for them constituted a Free Economic Zones created in Moldova in 2001 by Law⁶ 440 of July 27, 2001 in order to attract domestic and foreign investments. According to a report⁷ Ministry of Economy and Free Economic Zones infrastructure activity in January 1, 2018 operates seven free trade zones where it operates 184 residents, who developed a total investment volume of 348.6 mln. US dollars being increase in 2017 over the previous year by 22% percent. The largest share of investments has attracted a Free Economic Zone Balti 56.9% then placed FEZ FEZ Ungheni 20.9% and Expo-Business Chisinau 17.4%, and activities by companies are part of the production, sale, sorting, packaging, marking and other operations with goods transit and auxiliary types of activities permitted by law. The amount of taxes and mandatory payments of 410.4 million lei being, an increase over the previous year. An estimation of investment activity made by Expert Group⁸ in the 6th edition

³ EU suspends financial support for Moldova <https://www.dw.com/ro/ue-a-suspendat-sprijinul-financiar-pentru-moldova-%C8%99i-impune-trei-condi%C8%9Bii-pentru-deblocarea-banilor/a-44540904> (Visited on 14.01.2019)

⁴ The socio-economic <https://mei.gov.md/ro/documents-terms/situatia-macroeconomica-note-informative-privind-evolutia-social-economica> (Visited on 14.01.2019)

⁵ 2017 annual report of the National Bank of Moldova https://www.bnm.md/files/RA_2017_RO_ISBN.pdf (Visited on 14.01.2019)

⁶ Law no. 440 of 21 July 2001 on Free Economic Zones, published on 06.09.2001 in the Official Gazette no. Subsequent 108-109 with modifications.

⁷ Free economic zones or industrial free zones (FEZ) <https://mei.gov.md/ro/content/zonele-economice-libere> (Visited on 16.01.2019)

⁸ MACRO: 2018 Investments in Moldova and how they devein a sustainable solution for the country's development <http://curentul.md/stiri/macro-2018-investitiile-in>

of the international conference MACRO 2018 in Moldova investment rate varies around 22% of GDP, which according to experts is a figure quite modest sale, sorting, packaging, marking and other operations with goods transit and auxiliary types of activities permitted by law. The amount of taxes and mandatory payments of 410.4 million lei being, an increase over the previous year. An estimation of investment activity made by Expert Group⁹ in the 6th edition of the international conference MACRO 2018 in Moldova investment rate varies around 22% of GDP, which according to experts is a figure quite modest sale, sorting, packaging, marking and other operations with goods transit and auxiliary types of activities permitted by law. The amount of taxes and mandatory payments of 410.4 million lei being, an increase over the previous year. An estimation of investment activity made by Expert Group¹⁰ in the 6th edition of the international conference MACRO 2018 in Moldova investment rate varies around 22% of GDP, which according to experts is a figure quite modest.

Economic factors affecting the creation of atypical situations by ensuring state budget revenues by pricing by foreign trade through labor, external state debt by changing conjuncture, the dynamics of their assessment by experts is presented in Figure 3.

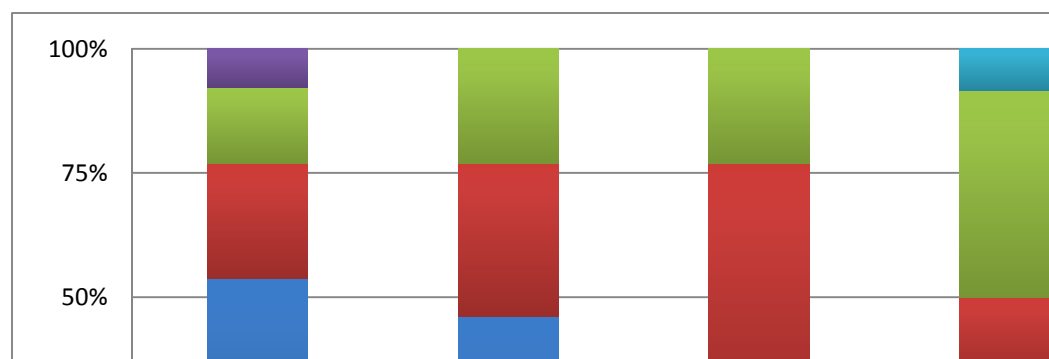


Figure 3. Estimation of economic factors by experts

Source: prepared by the author based on expert analysis of the data sheet

State budget revenues showed a higher share of assessments with maximum score (5 points) by experts, which shows as a characteristic of economic factors most likely to create atypical situations. The state budget is a source of livelihood of the public institutions and benefits for every

republica-moldova-si-cum-pot-ele-deveni-o-solutie-sustenabila-pentru-dezvoltarea-tarii.html (Visited on 16.01.2019)

⁹ Ibidem

¹⁰ Ibidem

citizen (right to education, right to health care, etc.) and spending priorities for the state budget approved by the Government annually and certified by budget law State and fiscal policy. Planning a budget with a deficit, which is assumed to be obtained from external sources to finance projects and domestic sources were identified some privatisation receipts, is a very risky action for making any commitments.

The price level in the last decade have fluctuated both positive and negative direction of growth (decrease) in different fields. Regulating the level of prices by the Government and subordinate structures is one of the aspects that can create unusual situations as a result of higher price levels for some products and services for businesses and individuals. Example in this context can serve variation in bread prices. This food can be considered a strategic product because poverty is the absence. In the last five years were moved attempts by producers to change product prices, but every time situations were handled variously. On August 15, 2015 when bakery companies from Moldova decided to raise bread prices by 15%. Despite the fact that the bread is considered a product of first necessity, and prices must be consulted Bakers Association in Moldova has made a decision to raise prices simultaneously by all bakery businesses. In these circumstances created atypical situation was resolved including the competent bodies of state structures, which have held meetings and have ensured that the national legal framework. Under a large manufacturer and is Franzeluța and holding an assortment of bread quite varied, can work under conditions of negative returns on certain types, they are produced in small quantities, as happened until January 2018, then increased from 10 to 25 money units. Gradual rise in bread prices situation is unnoticed, but felt some strata of the population, for whom every penny counts.

Another example is atypical situations created by the variation in energy prices and especially the natural ones: liquid and gaseous fuels. Formation energy prices is for the National Agency for Energy Regulation (ANRE) in accordance with the legal framework in force¹¹. In the current prices of petroleum products are determined in accordance with Act No. petroleum products. 461 providing for price cap¹² for retail, for a period of 14 days according to Platts quotations which cannot be overcome by commercial agents to internal pricing. According to media sources amended legal framework, and pricing of March 1, 2019 will become the responsibility of the entity that will not set a price that exceeds a mark-up more than 10% of the purchase price. Atypical situation created in this case

¹¹ Law on Energy No. 174 09.21.2017

¹² Energy Regulatory Agency, pricing ceiling for liquid fuels (visited on 01.19.2019) available at <https://www.anre.md/>

is the question: Why return to the old formula for calculating the price? Why set rules ineffective, leading us to the old formula?

Moldova's foreign trade is not currently in the safest period. The appearance of atypical situations in the context of foreign trade is already a standard feature or characteristic. Where foreign trade is dependent on the partnership, collaboration and agreements signed by Romania with other community members. Moldova is a member of the WTO since 2001, a fact that benefits from free trade in goods and services and assistance in the protection of rights and regulation differences that may occur in the external trade. In 2008 Moldova obtained from the European Commission Regulation No signing. 55/2008 introducing autonomous trade preferences. This means that price caps were set for industrial production exported from Moldova and agricultural products improved access to the European market. Only original products from Moldova obtained freely accessible only for fruits and vegetables fresh or frozen setting duties. Since 2011, the Agreement on trade zone within the CIS, has reduced a number of bilateral agreements between members of the signatory states and set some common rules which also the mechanism of disputes and maintenance of a number of 10 000 groups of goods duty zero. These conditions of development of foreign trade, efforts provided by the Ministry of Economy and Infrastructure does not ensure the emergence of crisis or unusual macroeconomic circumstances. In the last 10 years the evolution of exports recorded in 2009-2010 and 2015-2016 actually gaps created by economic crises. In the period 2017-2018 the foreign trade is growing, share of the EU to CIS countries also increase for EU-level statistical analysis so everything is in time and according to strategic directions, but de facto remained agricultural production in vineyards, orchards and vineyards. So we face an unusual situation?! Although exports to the EU values are quite high, the highest export share of EU countries lies Romania. Conducting export-import relationship demonstrates another paradox import quota in Ukraine, China, Turkey is a considerable while exports to these countries is significant. So it is an atypical situation of cooperation relations and external trade. Another economic factor atypical situation created by the export of goods is 32.4% share of re-exports in total exports while exports of local goods it is 67.6%.

Managerial factors were estimated by valuation experts IV position and characteristics that influence their occurrence are transparency in decision making, organizational skills, communicative interdependence, migration of human resources. Figure 4 presents the assessments of experts on features.

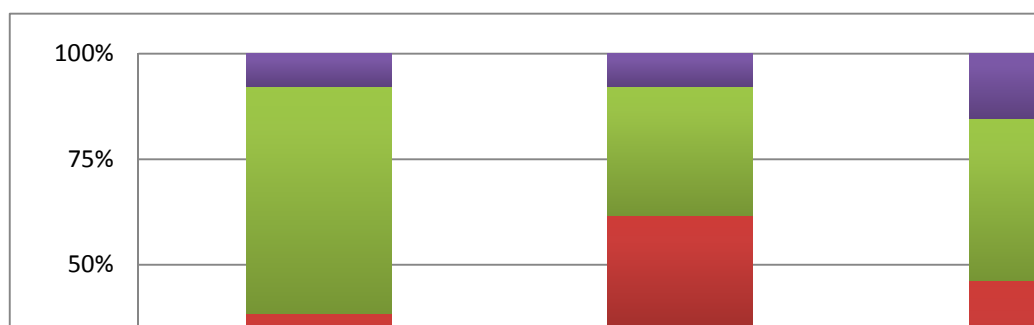


Figure 4. Estimation of managerial factors in the formation of atypical situations by experts

Source: Developed by the author based on expert analysis of the results sheet.

Assessments of experts shows that the most influential characteristic is the migration of human resources management. At the macroeconomic level this feature manifests itself differently in different sectors of the national economy. For example in agriculture, labor migration is an opportunity for operators in the agricultural field during harvest of agricultural production, when every hour is important to collect the harvest. Factors atypical situations are found in the following paradox: the greater distances come people who agree with seasonal pay, and people are not motivated to work in their locality. Education atypical situation is otherwise, not seeking the allowance unique wages and working conditions, young professionals will not activate after graduation, although they are beneficiaries of state scholarships. Thus the share of persons of retirement age in education is growing. Staff in the administrative issue of migration is influenced by political affiliation or kinship top manager and not the professionalism, skills, work experience, etc. elements characteristic of a specialist requested and so on elements characteristic of a specialist requested.

Organisational skills are characteristic professionalism manager position held. Management System certification in Moldova staff skills have not developed that as a reference point to occupy top management positions at companies with majority state shares. Appointments to these positions are indisputable, are occupied by experienced managers with professional skills, only atypical situation summarises the question: why more and more enterprises owned by state fails or losses? Accordingly these managers are appointed to similar positions in other organisations, so previous managerial organisation is not a problem and is not considered as serious or creating negative economic phenomena.

Transparency is a key decision fairly current macroeconomic and modern. With the advent of ICT possibilities, each governmental entity has initiated a series of consultations with society approving certain amendments to the legal framework and drafting new legal framework. Outside consultations public institutions place public information about the history and management representatives, organisational structure and operation, about programs, policies, strategies, operational plans, plans for the future, and about implementation of these activities. Effectively placed information constituting the legal framework for the operation or use in business, targeting subdivisions and the superior control authorities or control and subordinate agencies.

Of particular interest is the process of communication and interdependence of the levels of management decision-making processes, information exchange, intelligence analysis, etc. These management features were assessed by experts with four points approximately 50% of the experts participating. Atypical situations occur in this case after the occurrence of erroneous data reports that have not been submitted on time and correctly or need to alter the appearance of the legal framework as soon as it was adopted.

Institutional factors are fifth and their characteristics are changing the legal reforms, fiscal policy, corruption. The weight of the findings is presented in Figure 5.

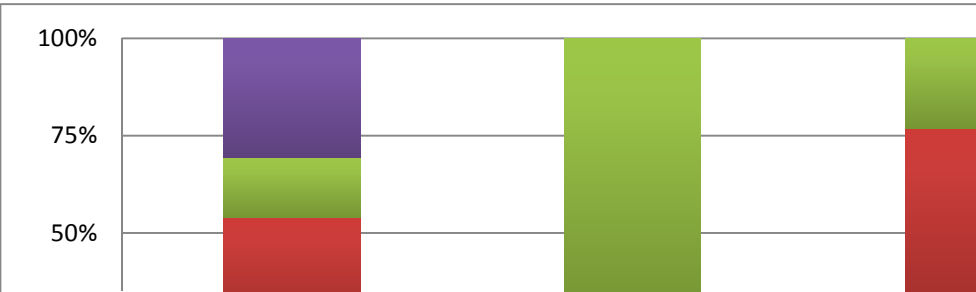


Figure 5. Appreciation of institutional factors

Source: prepared by the author based on expert analysis of the data sheet

The main feature is the institutional factors at this stage in view of the phenomenon of corruption experts. This phenomenon is studied, analysed, researched and described all economic and legal methods both nationally and internationally. Internationally indicator measure Corruption Perceptions Index, which is calculated canceled and following a review of information from research is established top countries by level of

perceived corruption. In his research, the author Iurie Gațcan¹³ [12] states that "... massive corruption in Moldova compromise efficiency and dynamic economies that are efficient development" which confirms the negative effect of the studied phenomenon researcher, and estimated by expert sheet expert. The same study noted that the most common crimes in corruption in Moldova are excess power or excess duties, trading in influence and passive corruption. We believe that it is these phenomena are initiators atypical situations identified by institutional factors. A high level of corruption and bureaucracy develops another phenomenon, which can be an initiator of atypical situations, plus a handling element temporal factors, financial and human resources. Development elements of corruption is determined internationally as an unstable country legislation and poor managerial organization of public institutions. The phenomenon of corruption itself is an atypical case in that it generates poverty and social problems,

A feature of the institutional factors is the fiscal policy in Moldova, which in recent years more difficult is provided both in terms of approval by the legal procedures and in achievements by honouring its payment planned expenditures. A Chapter stability fiscal policy in Moldova is not provided, even if is undertaken at some methods for taxing individuals and businesses in order to stimulate honouring tax obligations. With the initialing of the Association Agreement, Moldova shall amend processes and legal framework in line with EU legislation. Under Directive 2011/85 / EU Member States are obliged to convert to the new rule¹⁴ establishing the budget and tax policy, providing term planning at least three years, according to Example Member States will be obliged our country to pass this planning model. Eventually atypical situations related to this topic will start in the near future in Moldova, where fiscal policy is approved with large deficiencies in the short term (annual).

Social factors are estimated by experts at number six as sources of initiation of atypical situations. Figure 6 shows appreciation features: meeting the needs of the degree of importance hierarchical level qualification standard of living.

¹³ Gațcan Iu., Corruption as a social phenomenon and anti-corruption mechanisms, Thesis, 2015, available at

http://www.cnaa.md/files/theses/2016/24368/iurie_gatcan_thesis.pdf (Visited on 01.20.2019)

¹⁴ Fiscal governance in Moldova in EU, available at

http://mf.gov.md/sites/default/files/analiza_guvernantei_bugetar-fiscale_in_rm_o.pdf (Visited 1/20/2019)

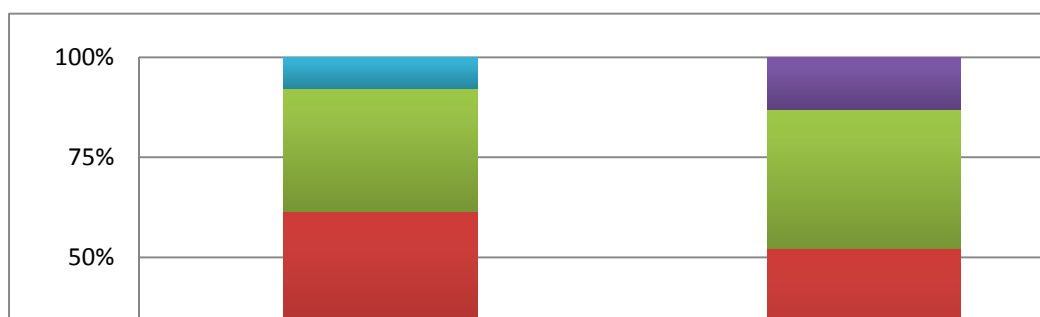


Figure 6. Assessment of social factors by expert characteristics score

Source: prepared by the author based on expert analysis of the data sheet

The largest share of social factors is characterized by the standard of living. All reports of government structures, statistical data analysis, studies, etc. states that the living standards of citizens of Moldova is decent, where the average salary is twice the subsistence minimum, but atypical situation in this respect is created from inward migration in search of a higher standard of living good is growing. If before most of the migrants were hoping to return to their country, now more and more of them settle down with their families without return. Get fit with a workforce aged 23-35 years, which would be a real saving for the national economy, aging populations and ensuring social fund. According to the study presented by Professor George Heels¹⁵ social stratification after the material well as subjective assessments of respondents in the study is determined by three levels: living luxurious 2% of the population; people who are experiencing difficulties in the acquisition of long objects of use 40% (middle stage) and concentrated population in the poverty 58% (instead of from the bottom) in the hierarchical classification. Atypical situation created is the interpretation by the population factor "output" of the standard of living that is occupied by arguments such as "employment in the ruling party, positioning close to the delivery of goods, place in the power structure, etc.", which They are diametrically opposed directions real resolution (education, profession, occupation in employment, career growth, etc.). people who are experiencing difficulties in the acquisition of long objects of use 40% (middle stage) and concentrated population in the poverty 58% (instead of from the bottom) in the hierarchical classification.

¹⁵ Calcai Gh., *Social stratification by level of living, for project institutional communication of the Institute of European Integration and Political Sciences*, ASM evolution of social stratification in society transforming conditions and prospects of European integration of Moldova, iiesp.asm.md › 2011/12 › 5-Gheorghe-Calcai

Atypical situation created is the interpretation by the population factor "output" of the standard of living that is occupied by arguments such as "employment in the ruling party, positioning close to the delivery of goods, place in the power structure, etc.", which They are diametrically opposed directions real resolution (education, profession, occupation in employment, career growth, etc.). people who are experiencing difficulties in the acquisition of long objects of use 40% (middle stage) and concentrated population in the poverty 58% (instead of from the bottom) in the hierarchical classification. Atypical situation created is the interpretation by the population factor "output" of the standard of living that is occupied by arguments such as "employment in the ruling party, positioning close to the delivery of goods, place in the power structure, etc.", which They are diametrically opposed directions real resolution (education, profession, occupation in employment, career growth, etc.).

Factors Innovation through inventions, scientific research and technology transfer experts are positioned in seventh place and estimated assessments are presented in Figure 7.

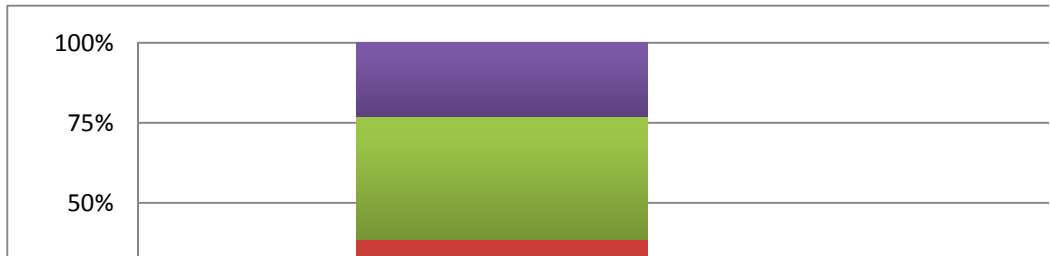


Figure 7. The estimation of innovation factor characteristics by experts

Source: prepared by the author based on expert analysis sheet

Assessments of experts, summarizes these broader factors that influence the creation stink atypical macroeconomic situations of the country. Looking at Table 1 of Annex 4.3. We find that the evolution of the registration of patents for the period 2011-2018 AGEPI is a constant around the values between 96 and 155 patents a year overall and recorded by the citizens of the Republic of Moldova holders are between 64 and 97 year patent . Developing innovative creativity is supported by the Academy of Sciences of Moldova and the Agency for Innovation and Technology Transfer as governmental institutions that have policies and sustainable development strategies and development assistance innovative spirit at different levels of social development. The actions to promote the spirit of creativity is the organization of exhibitions, fairs, conferences and other activities at national and international level. Atypical situations among actors Innovation is found in the following context, not seeking to

registered holders inventions in various fields of national economy, their impact in economic efficiency is not identified.

Technical factors are important in creating atypical situations macroeconomic rank eight in the view of the experts involved in the study. In Figure 8 are plotted features technical factors: the availability of program or strategy, setting realistic goals, compliance periods planned, ensuring control technology.

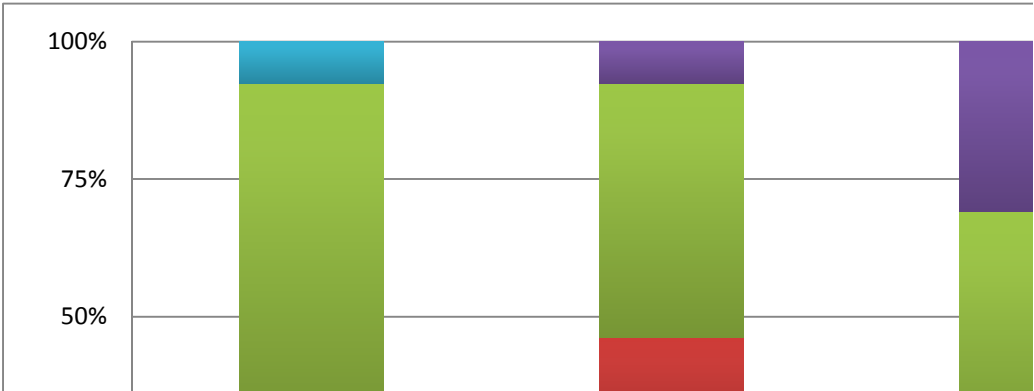


Figure 8. Appreciation of technical factors of the evaluators

Source: Developed by the author based on expert analysis sheet

Obviously, technical factors are categorized as one of the least influence, but the impact estimated characteristics can create a precedent of atypical situations very common. When determining the real targets, the subject is undeniable. All strategies, programs and sustainable development policies at national level are made depending on the research of the existing situation and the issues involved, but atypical situations show that there were prioritized issues to resolve in order to be able self-settlement stink at 30% of those placed in the minority with solving the priority. Demonstrate the effectiveness of management theory and practice of prioritizing problems to solve, and problem-solving efficiency reaches maximum level of excellence. National practice of targeting real strategies in various fields of national economy often creates prerequisites for establishing the priorities covered by copying elements of contact and approach complex character. In this context and identify atypical situations which agree in some way, making strategic planning process, those made by policymakers, the change of government and the associated failures or insufficient results previous government. Availability of programs since the initial phase is visible and undeniable, just to support an idea, it can be brought to the conviction of real achievement. Strategic planning processes are some of the most responsible and most difficult

aspect of appreciation tangible changes in the socio-political conditions, economic crisis and other external factors. Only prioritizing long-term planning is one of the fundamental elements which ensure achievement of objectives. Obviously Moldova has no experience so rich in this kind of planning and or previous experience of successful countries in the world cannot provide the same effects under various conditions. Only prioritizing long-term planning is one of the fundamental elements which ensure achievement of objectives. Obviously Moldova has no experience so rich in this kind of planning and or previous experience of successful countries in the world cannot provide the same effects under various conditions. Only prioritizing long-term planning is one of the fundamental elements which ensure achievement of objectives. Obviously Moldova has no experience so rich in this kind of planning and or previous experience of successful countries in the world can not provide the same effects under various conditions.

Quality factors, is a lower impact of atypical situations macroeconomic challenges being represented management systems, efficiency and effectiveness in Figure 9.

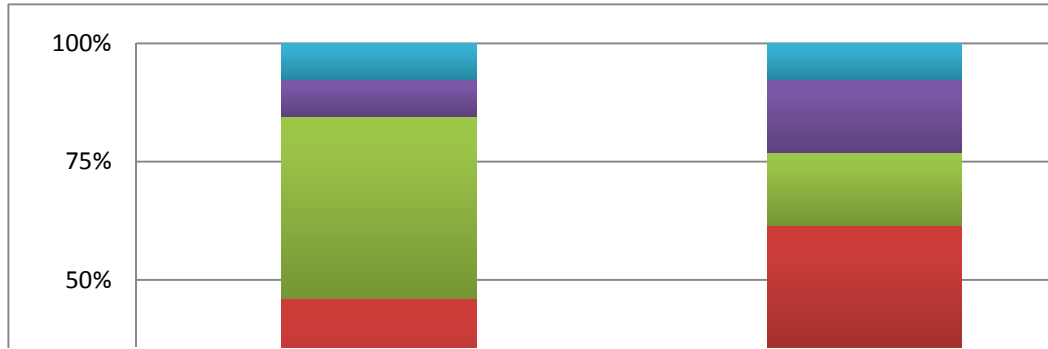


Figure 9. Appreciation of the quality factors

Source: prepared by the author based on expert analysis sheet

Making the difference between efficiency and effectiveness is sometimes difficult for economists or experts in the field. Ensuring efficiency in strategic planning and implementing the expected results are essentially applying an efficient and coherent development of macroeconomic policies in the context of sustainable development.

Assisting macro-economic processes of quality management systems, represents an innovative step in ensuring the efficiency of management processes for planning and conducting targets mainly situations and problems facing the national economy and modern economic society. Interaction with the quality factors management and innovation, is the opportunity of solving atypical situations created all kind of factors. The only relevant system without geographical or economic application feature

currently Moldova is the quality management system and solving atypical situations are treating the process approach. Quality being assimilated each process element, each activity or item / service per final interpretation is to meet the need, desire or request. Interpretation and perfect assimilation processes solving atypical situations macroeconomic process involving many actors and factors of addition have a pretty wide spectrum.

Last factors that may create atypical situations are natural ones. Figure 10 presents assessments of their characteristics.

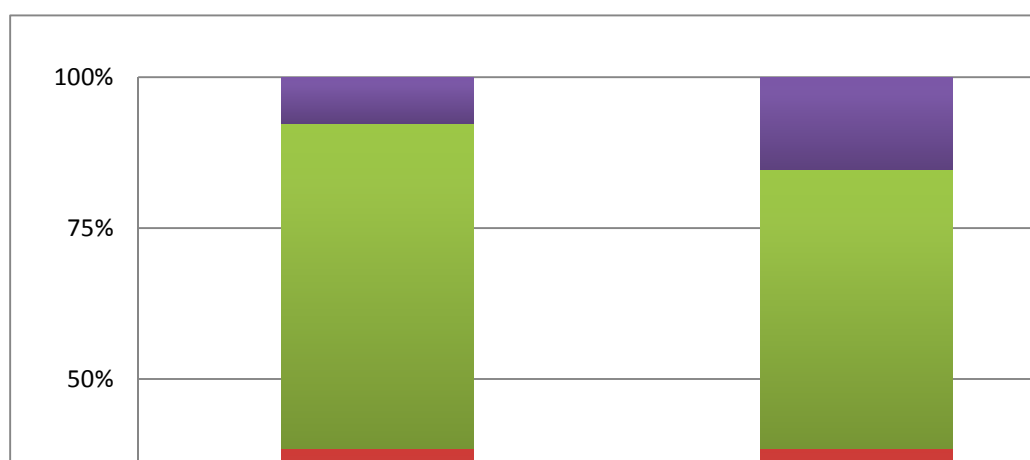


Figure 10. Estimation of natural factors of assessors

Source: prepared by author by analysing the expert sheet

As a result of the appreciation in value of natural factors, most of the experts found that the force-major situations and natural resources can create macroeconomic atypical situations. It is obvious that the situations created by natural disasters, war or climatic factors causes some special situations are less controllable and consequences settlement. Ensuring macroeconomic economic processes is achieved by planning financial resources reserve in case of necessity will be involved in the liquidation of this type of situation. The natural resources of the country are some bonuses provided by geographical and exploitation of any kind of natural resources depends on the human factor.

In conclusion

Challenges incurred by the national economy in recent decades, show that not only long-term strategies approved by the executive are not effective and stimulating factors are not controllable financial problems. Ensuring financial stability in ensuring conduct of business processes according to the laws of market economy, the national economy is

contemporary challenge. In the context of identifying solutions segment priority will ensure macroeconomic reducing atypical situations. Addressing institutional factors in Moldova is a current problem but also tinged international monitoring, with the initialing of the Association Agreement with the EU. Some phenomena associated with non-functioning state institutions such as corruption, money laundering, tax evasion, etc. are some issues that have already transnational tint, and their resolution requires the involvement of all international organizations aimed at eliminating these phenomena.

Innovation factors being considered only in the 7 importance for the solution, confirmed by current international applying different strategies to promote a high level of performance in sectors of national economy development and further growth. At European level, the implementation of research and technology transfer is directed towards the development of SME segment, an objective set in the Europe - 2020¹⁶ [15], which is aiming to achieve smart growth through the development of knowledge and innovation.

References

Sargu L., (2018), *Through the management of atypical Situations in quality management system: management of the collective Monograph the innovative economic development intension*, Poland, June 2018, pp 198-208.

Sargu L., (2019), Management Functions In Atypical Situations, in: Knowledge Horizons - Economics, Volume 11, Issue 3/2019, Bucharest, Romania, pp 52-61., 0.6 as E-ISSN: 2066-1061,

<http://orizonturi.ucdc.ro/arhiva/KHE%20nr.%203%20-%202019/x1.%20Knowledge%20Horizons%20-%20primele%20pagini.pdf>

EU suspends financial support for Moldova (2018), <https://www.dw.com/ro/ue-a-suspendat-sprijinul-financiar-pentru-moldova-%C8%99i-impune-trei-condi%C8%9Bii-pentru-deblocarea-banilor/a-44540904> (Visited on 14.01.2019)

The socio-economic (2019), <https://mei.gov.md/ro/documents-terms/situatia-macroeconomica-note-informative-privind-evolutia-social-economica> (Visited on 14.01.2019)

annual report of the National Bank of Moldova (2017), https://www.bnm.md/files/RA_2017_RO_ISBN.pdf (Visited on 14.01.2019)

¹⁶ 2020 Commission Communication A strategy for smart, sustainable and inclusive growth Brussels, 3.3.2010 COM (2010) 2020 final.

Law, (2001), no. 440 of 21 July 2001 on Free Economic Zones, published on 06.09.2001 in the Official Gazette no. Subsequent 108-109 with modifications.

Free economic zones or industrial free zones (FEZ) (2019), <https://mei.gov.md/ro/content/zonle-economice-libere> (Visited on 16.01.2019)

MACRO, (2018), Investments in Moldova and how they devein a sustainable solution for the country's development

<http://curentul.md/stiri/macro-2018-investitiile-in-republica-moldova-si-cum-pot-ele-deveni-o-solutie-sustenabila-pentru-dezvoltarea-tarii.html> (Visited on 16.01.2019)

Law, (2017), on Energy No. 174 09.21.2017

Energy Regulatory Agency, (2019), pricing ceiling for liquid fuels (visited on 01.19.2019) available at <https://www.anre.md/>

Gațcan Iu., (2015), Corruption as a social phenomenon and anti-corruption mechanisms, Thesis, 2015, available at

[http://www.cnaa.md/files/theses/2016/24368/iurie_gatcan_thesis.p](http://www.cnaa.md/files/theses/2016/24368/iurie_gatcan_thesis.pdf)df (Visited on 01.20.2019)

Fiscal governance in Moldova in EU, (2019), available at http://mf.gov.md/sites/default/files/analiza_guvernantei_bugetar-fiscale_in_rm_o.pdf (Visited 1/20/2019)

Călcîi Gh., (2011), *Social stratification by level of living, for project institutional communication of the Institute of European Integration and Political Sciences*, ASM evolution of social stratification in society transforming conditions and prospects of European integration of Moldova, iiesp.asm.md > 2011/12 > 5-Gheorghe-Calcai,

(2020), Commission Communication A strategy for smart, sustainable and inclusive growth Brussels, 3.3.2010 COM (2010) 2020 final

PARADOXES OF RAP ARTISTS' ROLE IDENTITY: SAGE, MAGICIAN OR TRICKSTER?

Nataliia Kravchenko,^{*}

nkravchenko@outlook.com

Valentyna Snitsar^{**},

vl.snitsar@gmail.com

Viktoriia Blidchenko-Naiko^{***}

viktorianaiko@ukr.net

Abstract: *The paper aims at analyzing the archetypal roles of Sage, Magician or Trickster, which manifest the unexpected aspects of the artists' identity in modern rap discourse. Archetypal roles are characterized by symbolic, semantic, thematic, syntactical and pragmatic parameters, some of which are inter-archetypal. As the commonest role devices, we identified the means of ambiguity and incongruence of meanings, based on antithesis, oxymorons, metaphors, non sequitur, juxtaposition of disparate ideas, concepts and actions, accentuated by syntactical devices such as line break, ellipsis, parataxis, asyndeton, etc. From a pragmatic viewpoint, incongruence and ambiguity correspond to a violation of the cooperative maxims of relevance, manner and quantity of information, triggering discursive implicature. However, these implicatures are specific for each archetype as they depend on the archetypally-based ideas, motifs and themes: meanings associated with suppressed fears and feelings of the author-performer indicate Trickster-Shadow roles; sacralization and symbolization of reality is inherent in Sage roles; constructing an illusory world and filling it with supernatural powers is characteristic of Magician roles, and creating a ludic world of playing with forms and meanings corresponds to Trickster-Jester roles.*

Keywords: *archetypal roles, Sage, Magician, Trickster, identity, rap discourse, symbolic, semantic, thematic, syntactical, pragmatic, ambiguity, incongruence, implicature.*

^{*} Professor, Head of the Chair of Romance and Germanic languages and Translation, National University of Life and Environmental Sciences of Ukraine, Kyiv.

^{**} Associate Professor, National University of Life and Environmental Sciences of Ukraine, Kyiv.

^{***} Associate Professor, Department of Ukrainian Studies, O.O. Bogomolets National Medical University, Kyiv.

Introduction

The significance of psychological and cultural archetypes in the identity construction and actualization remains one of the most controversial and insufficiently investigated problems of the present-day interdisciplinary studies.

As William L. Howard points out, “archetypes are keys to understanding humanity’s sense of identity as a collective group. They can take the form of personal behavior, rituals, religious practices, dreams, or literature. An individual’s identity is formed from a combination of both unique and collective experience”¹.

Rap artists’ identity displays a paradoxical fuse of “marginal individualism” and “openness of being”, postmodern intertextuality based on allusions, “allegories, metaphors, symbolic and archetypal imagery” – and “flamboyant declarations of the most mundane feelings, desires and goals”². The data processed in the paper showed that along with the expected “outlaw” and protest roles, rap artists quite often show rather unexpected versions of self, in particular exploring the archetypal roles of Sage, Magician or Trickster. As A.K. Harrison suggests, “hip-hop has never felt so unpredictable nor so baffling in its kaleidoscope of characters”³. However, such role facets are based on particular psychological and cultural archetypes, either unconsciously or intentionally involved by rappers to overcome the oversimplified public stereotypes of themselves. The intentional involvement of more “attractive” archetypes may be regarded, in our opinion, as a specific impression management strategy.

The unexpected role manifestations of the rappers’ identity remain unexplored both by linguistic and interdisciplinary studies, which determines the **novelty** and **topicality** of this paper.

The analysis of the latest studies and publications

Theoretical-methodological framework for this study encompasses:

(a) *the theory of archetypes* (C. Jung⁴; D. Lindenfeld⁶; P. Pietikainen⁷) and “neo-archetypal theory”, the latter bridging the gap

¹ Howard W.L., *Archetype. Encyclopedia of Identity* / R. L. Jackson II, M.A. Hogg (eds.). 2010, Vol. 1, pp. 29-32.

² Kravchenko N.K., Biblical intertextuality devices in African-American rap texts (based on the Kendrick Lamar’s album “Damn”). *International journal of philology*. 2019, Vol. 10 (2,) p.13.

³ Harrison, A.K., *Hip Hop and Race. The Routledge Reader on The Sociology of Music* / Sheperd J. & Devine K. (eds.), 2015, pp. 191-199.

⁴ Jung, C.G., Archetypes and the Collective Unconscious [sic]. *Collected Works of C.G. Jung*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1969, Volume 9 (Part 1), 470 p.

⁵ Jung, C.G., *Psychological types. Collected works*. London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1976, V.6, 608 p.

between psychological and cultural archetypes viewing them as equally important in modelling the versions of the self in the world, organized around archetypical characters (M. Faber & J. Mayer⁸; S. Shadraconis⁹);

(b) few studies addressing the issue of archetypes in rap songs – in particular, Strong Black Woman archetype in a genre of Mother Appreciation rap, *messiah archetype in hip hop* (D. Hodge¹⁰), the rebel archetype in Kendrick Lamar's texts (N. Kravchenko¹¹); cultural archetypes in the construction of "possible worlds" of modern African-American rap (N. Kravchenko & V. Snitsar¹²);

(c) the investigations, which explore the concepts of role and identity in their various correlations (B. Benwell & E. Stokoe¹³), i.e. by *Role Identity* theory (J. Grube & J. Piliavin¹⁴), discourse analysis of one-to-many interactions eliciting the roles' adoption and playing in regards to "identity and personality faces" (N. Kravchenko & T. Pasternak¹⁵; H. Spencer-Oatey¹⁶), Subject Positions theory (J. Brockmeier & D. Carbaugh¹⁷; B. Davies & R. Harré⁸) and dramaturgical analysis

⁶ Lindenfeld, D., Jungian archetypes and the discourse of history. *Rethinking History*, 2009, 13(2), pp. 217-234.

⁷ Pietikainen, P., Archetypes as symbolic forms. (Electronic version.) *Journal of Analytical Psychology*, 1998, 43, pp. 325-343.

⁸ Faber, M.A., Mayer, J.D., Resonance to archetypes in media: There's some accounting for taste. *Journal of Research in Personality*, 2009, 43, pp. 307-322.

⁹ Shadraconis, S., "Leaders and Heroes: Modern Day Archetypes," *LUX: A Journal of Transdisciplinary Writing and Research from Claremont Graduate University*, 2013, Vol. 3: Iss. 1, Article 15. Available at: <http://scholarship.claremont.edu/lux/vol3/iss1/15>

¹⁰ Hodge, D.W., *Homeland Insecurity: A Hip Hop Missiology for the Post-Civil Rights Context*. Downers Grove, IVP Academic, 2018, 304 p.

¹¹ Kravchenko, N., Biblical intertextuality devices in African-American rap texts (based on the Kendrick Lamar's album "Damn"). *International journal of philology*. 2019, Vol. 10 (2), pp. 12-17.

¹² Kravchenko, N., Snitsar, V., Cultural archetypes in the construction of "possible worlds" of modern African-American rap (based on Kendrick Lamar's texts). *Euromentor Journal*. 2019, V. (4), pp.80-92.

¹³ Benwell, B., Stokoe, E., *Discourse and identity*. Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press, 2006, 314 p.

¹⁴ Grube, J. A., Piliavin, J.A., Role Identity, Organizational Experiences, and Volunteer Performance. *Personality and Social Psychology Bulletin*. 2000, 26(9), pp. 1108-1119.

¹⁵ Kravchenko, N., Pasternak, T., Claim for identity or personality face: The Oscar winners' dilemma. *Lege artis. Language yesterday, today, tomorrow. The journal of University of SS Cyril and Methodius in Trnava*. Warsaw: De Gruyter Open, III (1), 2018, pp. 142-178.

¹⁶ Spencer-Oatey, H., Theories of identity and the analysis of face. *Journal of pragmatics*, 2007, 39, pp. 639-656.

¹⁷ Brockmeier, J., Carbaugh, D.A. (eds). / *Narrative and identity: Studies in autobiography, self, and culture*. Amsterdam, John Benjamins Publishing Company, 2001. Available at: <https://doi.org/10.1075/sin.1>

(R. Stebbins¹⁹). These groups of approaches overlap in their methodological premises and research results since all of them contribute to the problem of the role functions in specifying the versions of selves – both individual and collective, associated with discursive identity;

(d) studies focused on music preferences in their correlations with personal archetypes and hip-hop identities (J. Pearson & S. Dollinger²⁰; J. Merchant²¹; J. Haaken, J. Wallin-Rushman, S. Patange.²²)

Database and methodology

The data processed in this paper include the lyrics of Kendrick Lamar, Taylor the Creator, XXXTentacion, Asap Rocky, Juice WRLD and Mike WiLL Made-It – famous American rappers, singers and songwriters.

A methodological focus of the analysis, undertaken by the authors of this article, is a concern with archetypal dimensions of the rap artists' roles. The relationship between the role and the archetype motive is established on the basis of the archetypal images, introduced by C. Jung, as well as classification of archetypes and their corresponding distinctive features available in *archetypal psychology*, neo-archetypal theory, cultural (literary) archetypes studies.

The data analysis has been undertaken within the integrative framework of the role of the archetypal analysis based on the method of text interpretation, stylistic and conceptual analysis of symbolic imagery, metaphors, allusions, added by some elements of pragmatic analysis aimed at decoding the implicit meanings intended by songwriters.

The purpose of the article

This paper is aimed at identifying the archetypal roles of Sage, Magician and Trickster, manifested by rap lyrics imagery, symbols, semantic, syntactical and pragmatic devices.

¹⁸ Davies, B., Harré, R., Positioning: The discursive production of selves. *Journal for the theory of social behavior*, 1990, 20 (1), pp. 43-63.

¹⁹ Stebbins, R.A., Role-distance, activity distance, and the dramaturgical metaphor. *The Drama of Social Life: A Dramaturgical Handbook* / C. Edgley (ed.), Ashgate, Surrey, UK, 2013, pp. 123–136.

²⁰ Pearson, J.L., Dollinger, S.J., Music preference correlates of Jungian types. *Personality and Individual Differences*, 36, 2004, pp. 1005-1008.

²¹ Merchant, J., (2009). A reappraisal of classical archetype theory and its implications for theory and practice. *Journal of Analytical Psychology*, 54(3), pp. 339-358. Available at: <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1468-5922.2009.01784.x>

²² Haaken, J., Wallin-Rushman, J., Patange, S., Global hip-hop identities: Black youth, psychoanalytic action research, and the moving to the beat project. *Journal of Community & Applied Social Psychology*, 2012, 22, pp. 63-74.

Presentation of basic material of the research

Along with the “kindred” archetypical roles of the Rebel, Outlaw and Destroyer, predictable for the studied genre, the rather unexpected roles of the Sage, Magician and Trickster also emerge rather “regularly” in the analyzed rap lyrics, which determined the main focus of our article.

Magician and Sage: archetypal roles of existential search

The roles of Magician and Sage have much in common – eliciting the search of principles of development, the essence of things. However, unlike the Sage, the Magician operates with supernatural powers that have no scientific explanation.

In the role of the Magician the rap artists employ the special lexis designating the magic characters, tools, acts, supernatural powers and creatures: “*I am a spirit, an entity, uh*”²³; “*She’s gonna be dead, I just got a magic wand*”²⁴; “*The ghost of Mandela, hope my flows, they propel it*”²⁵; “*This is what the devil plays before he goes to sleep*”, “*I’ve got a gang of wolves*”²⁶; “*Dead Alive, it’s in my repertoire, forever even high*”²⁷; “*Demons in my brain, love*”²⁸.

It seems appropriate to quote here an assessment of contemporary rap by Jason King, the cultural critic and professor of global studies at New York University: “as the culture confronted cosmic disillusionment in the aftermath of the 2008 economic crash (...) their music got darker, weirder, and became about a willingness to confront demons and inner feelings in a way that we hadn’t quite seen before”²⁹.

According to the general principle of symbolization (basic for the rap discourse), magic symbols enter into particular paradigmatic relations when one designator may connote different symbolic meanings: “*Like*

²³ XXXTENTACION, *Infinity (888)*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-infinity-888-lyrics>

²⁴ Tyler, the Creator, *New Magic Wand*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-new-magic-wand-lyrics>

²⁵ Lamar, K., *Mortal Man*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-mortal-man-lyrics>

²⁶ Tyler, the Creator, *Bastard*, Available at: <https://genius.com/albums/Tyler-the-creator/Bastard>

²⁷ Asap Rocky, *Pain*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-pain-lyrics>

²⁸ Juice WRLD, *All Girls Are the Same*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-all-girls-are-the-same-lyrics>

²⁹ Muggs, J., (2016). Odd futures: how hip-hop shook off its macho image and got weird. *The Guardian*. Available at:

<https://www.theguardian.com/music/2016/apr/06/hip-hop-weird-image-nicki-minaj-kendrick-lamar-kanye-west>

*magic, like magic, like magic, gone / New magic, new magic, new magic wand.*³⁰

A magic wand here is not just a tool of magic, endowing a rap artist with the capability to change the world around him, but can also refer to a trunk as a “heavy argument” that “works wonders” in communication between people. In addition, having in mind the Tyler’s enthusiasm for painting the magic wand may denote the tool necessary to outline the object in the picture.

Magician can immerse in illusory realities with alcohol, drugs and other psychoactive substances. Correspondingly, the markers of the magician’s role include the names of the dwellers of the “inner world” the magician interacts with (“*demons running / Inside my heads telling me evil thoughts*”³¹; “*Devil standing here. Tryna’ make a deal, uh*”³²; “*You help me face my demons, I won’t hide, hide*”³³; “*But demons come to test us sometimes*”³⁴

On the other hand, mystic reality involves the archetypal motif of Magician’s transformation into animals or birds: “*I metamorph like I’m ‘posed ta, I might slice my wrist / Or pretend like a vulture and drop off this cliff*”³⁵; *Make my flow shapeshift, cold expression like a facelift*”.³⁶

The motive of metamorphosis, in its turn, is associated with the archetypal karmic motif of converting the souls into “animal or a bird according to mythologems, based on totemic beliefs and the mythological motif of reincarnation which correlates with the ancient idea of karma”.³⁷

The desire to find the truth and comprehend the laws of the universe brings the Magician closer to the Sage archetype, primarily manifested by the roles of ‘philosopher’ (with a descriptive motive “search for connections and the essence of things” and the ‘wise’ (based on the motive “values, knowledge and intelligence”). These roles are indexed by thematic facets of the rap songs, their symbolic imagery and stylistic syntactical devices.

³⁰ Tyler, the Creator, *New Magic Wand*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-new-magic-wand-lyrics>

³¹ Tyler, the Creator, *Bastard*. Available at: <https://genius.com/albums/Tyler-the-creator/Bastard>

³² Juice WRLD, *Empty*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-empty-lyrics>

³³ Juice WRLD, *Hide*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-hide-lyrics>

³⁴ XXXTENTACION. *Roalty*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-royalty-lyrics>

³⁵ Asap Rocky, *1Train*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-1train-lyrics>

³⁶ XXXTENTACION, *Infinity* (888). Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-infinity-888-lyrics>

³⁷ Kravchenko, N.K., Biblical intertextuality devices in African-American rap texts (based on the Kendrick Lamar’s album “Damn”). *International journal of philology*. Vol. 10 (2,) 2019, pp. 12-17.

At the conceptual and thematic level, the role of the philosopher is associated with the formulation of various worldview problems, i.e.:

(a) asking the “purely” philosophical questions: “*Can you be immortalized without your life bein' expired? Even though ya share the same blood, is it worth the time?*”, “*Like how much are you dependent?*”;³⁸

(b) revealing the philosophical attitude to life: “*Dealing with life and its highs and lows / I'm just livin' like I'm supposed*”;³⁹

(c) touching an eternal philosophical issue of borderline between life and death (“*Is it wickedness? Is it weakness?*”; “*Are we gonna live or die?*”), good and evil; loyalty and betrayal (“*Do you believe in me? Are you deceivin' me?*” “*Would you judge me a drughead or see me as K. Lamar? Or question my character and degrade me on every blog?*”)⁴⁰, this and “the other” world and the end of time (“*Do you head for the year; they say might be the end? Better look within*”⁴¹, the sense and meaninglessness of life (“*Guess that nothing lasts forever No, nothing lasts forever*”. *Exactly what you run from, you end up chasing*”, “*It's more to feed your mind, Water, sun and love, the one you love, All you need, the air you breathe*); predestination of events and cause-effect relations (the whole Kendrick Lamar’s composition “Duckworth”).⁴²

At the level of text production / meaning generation, the role of philosopher relies on the intended implicitness of the meanings, leaving the space of individual conceptual interpretation. An ordinary phrase is given an additional meaning due to its apparent irrelevancy and incoherence with its contextual environment. The lack of cohesiveness is intended to be conceptualized by the audience as a particular profound meaning (from the pragmatic viewpoint, the violation of the maxim of relevance triggers the conversational implicature to ‘repair’ the coherence): “*our dolphins are dazed, you calling away / 'Cause coffins is laid under a tombstone / Cause even when you die, they still throwing rocks at your grave*”⁴³; “*Can't be in the picture if it got no frame / Gon' let*

³⁸ Lamar, K., *Mortal Man*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-mortal-man-lyrics>

³⁹ Tyler, the Creator, *Forever*, Available at: <https://lyrics.lol/artist/685-tyler-the-creator/lyrics/65437-forever>

⁴⁰ Lamar, K., *Mortal Man*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-mortal-man-lyrics>

⁴¹ Asap Rocky. *Pain*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-pain-lyrics>

⁴² Lamar, K., *Duckworth*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-duckworth-lyrics>.

⁴³ XXXTENTACION. *One minute*. Available at: www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/xxxtentacion/oneminute.html

the world know 'cause I ain't got no shame"⁴⁴; *"A homeless man with a semi-tan complexion, / Asked me for ten rand, stressin' about dry land. / Deep water, powder blue skies, that crack open"*.⁴⁵

Thus, in the above examples ambiguity is foregrounded both semantically – by non sequitur (a stylistic device that combines statements / ideas that do not follow the principles of logic-semantic coherence) and syntactically – involving line breaks, ellipsis, parataxis, and asyndeton.

Such apparent incongruence relates to another property of the role – the sacralization, symbolization and metaphorization of the ordinary situations, objects and characters resulted from experiments with meanings and concepts. For example, in *"When the beef cooked, I ate y'all like, 'Mmm, mmm.' let's play ball / In a ballpark with all sharks and a blindfold, I rhyme cold"*⁴⁶ an additional meaning is based on the *compound metaphors* combined with other stylistic devices. The metaphor relies on interplay of different meanings of the noun *beef* ("food", and "a flareup") – to imply the ease with which Asap Rocky outfights his enemies if they arrange a showdown / a beef against him. This interpretation is "supported" by the inner form of the idiom "to eat someone alive/for breakfast/lunch", which means "to defeat or deal with someone easily" explicating a conceptual metaphor "TO EAT IS TO DEFEAT".

The inferred meaning (that the rapper is far superior to his enemies) is maintained by the second part of the line, which employs the rap authors' original metaphor "playing against Kendrick is swimming with closed eyes among a pack of sharks". In addition, this metaphor is inbuilt in another conceptual metaphor "TO RAP IS TO COMPETE IN SPORT", further actualized by a reference to a former professional baseball player Kenny Lofton in order to reinterpret the enemy's defeats in the context of rap skills (*"Confetti torture, drinkin' Henny like I'm Kenny Lofton, Outstanding"*).⁴⁷

At the syntactical stylistic level, the role of Sage-Philosopher is indexed by detachment constructions ("You can't afford to get caught up but you in too deep and the seashore ain't soil");⁴⁸ inversion, ellipsis, nominative sentences (*"Sea I was never into the beaches and all the sands"*),⁴⁹ *"Don't sell rocks seen the spectrum through the prisms"*,⁵⁰

⁴⁴ Tyler, the Creator. *New Magic Wand*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-new-magic-wand-lyrics>

⁴⁵ Lamar, K. *How much a dollar cost?* Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-how-much-a-dollar-cost-lyrics>

⁴⁶ Asap Rocky. *1Train*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-1train-lyrics>

⁴⁷ Ibid.

⁴⁸ Tyler, the Creator. *48*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-48-lyrics>

⁴⁹ Tyler, the Creator, *Foreword*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-c,reator-foreword-lyrics>

“Tired of feelin’ like I’m trapped in my damn mind”;⁵¹ rhetorical questions (“What is my worth? What is my worth?”⁵² and aposiopesis “Is all of my pain your freedom? Enjoy ...”⁵³ Such devices prompt the audience to reflexivity while restoring missing logical and semantic links.

From a pragmatic viewpoint, the identified syntactical-stylistic tools violate the maxim of quantity of information resulted in the corresponding discursive implicature.

Another motive-descriptor of the Sage archetype corresponds to the role of the “wise”, indexed by:

(a) bookish words (“*Somehow bypassed the bias and the -isms*”)⁵⁴, “*They got me frustrated, indecisive and power trippin’*”; “*The question is detrimental, paralyzin’ my thoughts*”);⁵⁵

(b) explicit reference to the rap artist’s intellect (“*Would you say my intelligence now is great relief?*”);⁵⁶

(c) intertextuality devices, i.e. quotations belonging to prominent figures (“*Sometimes you gotta close a door to open a window*”), precedential phenomena (“*Shades of grey will never change if I condone*”; “*It’s not a joke, murder she wrote*”⁵⁷, showing the artist’s erudition;

(d) scriptural passages and allusions: “*Most of y’all throw rocks and try to hide your hand*”;⁵⁸ “*Is it for the moment, and will he see me as Job? Take it from me and leave me worse than I was before?*”;⁵⁹ “*Have you ever opened up Exodus 14?*”⁶⁰

At the same time, the audience does not fully believe in the sincerity of the rapper in the roles of the philosopher or the wise, because at any moment these roles can be replaced by masks of a cynic, vulgar person, blasphemer and jargonaut. The metamodernistic rap appears as “the

⁵⁰ Asap Rocky, *1Train*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-1train-lyrics>

⁵¹ XXXTENTACION, *Everybody Dies in Their Nightmares*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-everybody-dies-in-their-nightmares-lyrics>

⁵² XXXTENTACION, *Alone, Part 3*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-alone-part-3-lyrics>

⁵³ XXXTENTACION, *Revenge*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-revenge-lyrics>

⁵⁴ Asap Rocky, *1Train*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-1train-lyrics>

⁵⁵ Lamar, K. *How much a dollar cost?* Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-how-much-a-dollar-cost-lyrics>

⁵⁶ Lamar, K. *m.A.A.d city*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-maad-city-lyrics>

⁵⁷ Tyler, the Creator, *New Magic Wand*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-new-magic-wand-lyrics>

⁵⁸ Lamar, K., *Element*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-element-lyrics>

⁵⁹ Lamar, K., *Fear*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-fear-lyrics>

⁶⁰ Lamar, K., *How much a dollar cost?* Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-how-much-a-dollar-cost-lyrics>

collision of lofty matters with the intentionally down-to-earth topics, the combination of bookish and obscene vocabulary, high and low registers”.⁶¹This combination of “unconnectable” “iconically (structurally) reproduces the absurdity and meaninglessness of human existence in the modern world”⁶² and becomes breeding grounds for the Trickster role-play scenario.

Trickster

Archetypal images involve different scenarios of role behavior, sometimes blurring the boundaries between roles, which basically corresponds to the aesthetics of rap as the meta-modernism genre of “free-for-all”. When the roles confusion becomes a narrative priority, the Trickster’s role emerges replacing reality with play (“*But I like playing dress up and mix match*”⁶³) in quest of different opportunities in different facets of being and space-time dimensions. As Harrison suggests, “identity plays in modern rap [which] for me harken back to the African diasporic trickster traditions which preceded hip-hop.”⁶⁴

The Trickster archetype manifests itself either under the mask of the Jester and Fool, or in the form of “Shadow” (according to C.G. Jung, Trickster is the rejected or ignored part of the identity repressed into the unconscious): “*Realize your dark side collides inside. You run as fast as you can but you can't hide*”.⁶⁵ For example, the whole composition *Yonkers*, built on paradoxes, represents a dialogue between Tyler the Creator and his shadow alter ego Wolf Haley.

It is the archetypal role of the Shadow that explains the numerous thrillers and chills of modern “weirdo” rap: “*It's pretty disgusting, finger crush your face I'll leave you permanently blushing, blood. Nosebleed drugs, cook you in the oven*”.⁶⁶

The first facet of Trickster-Jester is revealed at different levels of a rap text as a general ludic principle of its organization, based on:

⁶¹ Kravchenko, N., Snitsar, V., Cultural archetypes in the construction of “possible worlds” of modern African-American rap (based on Kendrick Lamar’s texts). *Euromentor Journal*. 2019, V. X (4), p. 84.

⁶² Ibidem.

⁶³ Tyler, the Creator, *Garbage*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-garbage-lyrics>

⁶⁴ Harrison, A.K., Hip Hop and Race, *The Routledge Reader on The Sociology of Music* /Sheperd J. & Devine K. (eds.), 2015, p. 195.

⁶⁵ Juice WRLD, *Run*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-run-lyrics>

⁶⁶ Tyler, the Creator, *Garbage*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-garbage-lyrics>

(a) proper buffoonery, tomfoolery: “*My all gold grills give her cold chills*”;⁶⁷ “*Party animals, I’m a lion in the zoo*”;⁶⁸ “*Treat your heart just like a blunt of OG / Roll it up, I kissed it and I smoke you / Gots to be joking...*”;⁶⁹ “*Tats in the middle my head like I’m Avatar*”;⁷⁰

(b) a rhetorical device of contrast between (1) ideas, for example, confessional motives vs. vulgar evaluations: “*Still don’t give a shit, my ignorance is still a bliss*”;⁷¹ (2) incongruent topics: “*I praise the Lord, then break the law*”;⁷² “*From another planet, birthplace cloud 9, hello, earthlings! My newest President an asshole*”;⁷³ ambivalent facets of identity reconciling an intellectual and a gangster, a believer and a blasphemer: “*Got drugs in my head, used to pray for the lock up*”;⁷⁴ a gentle lover and a cruel killer: “*I figured she was gonna / Break my heart regardless. / So I took her out and dumped her in the garbage*”.⁷⁵

The lexical markers of the role include the words with connotative or denotative senses of ‘play’, ‘mock’, ‘disguise’, ‘clown’, ‘mask’: “*Rappin’ as I’m mockin’ deaf rock stars / Wearin’ synthetic wigs made of anwar’s dreadlocks*”;⁷⁶ “*Tears of a clown, guess, I’m not all what is meant to be*”;⁷⁷ “*Tired of geelin’ like my life is a damn game*”;⁷⁸ “*With a black mask, that’s how we exfoliate*”;⁷⁹ “*Set ‘em up off and wet ‘em up off like it’s PlayStation, uh*”.⁸⁰

⁶⁷ Asap Rocky, *Palace*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-palace-lyrics>

⁶⁸ Juice WRLD, *Black & White*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-black-and-white-lyrics>

⁶⁹ Juice WRLD, *Hear Me Calling*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-hear-me-calling-lyrics>

⁷⁰ Juice WRLD, *Wasted*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-wasted-lyrics>

⁷¹ Asap Rocky, *Palace*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-palace-lyrics>

⁷² Asap Rocky, *Praise the Lord*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-praise-the-lord-da-shine-lyrics>

⁷³ Asap Rocky, *Distorted Records*, Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-distorted-records-lyrics>

⁷⁴ Juice WRLD, *Wasted*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-wasted-lyrics>

⁷⁵ Juice WRLD, *Make Believe*, Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-make-believe-lyrics>

⁷⁶ Tyler, the Creator, *Yonkers*, Available at <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-yonkers-lyrics>

⁷⁷ Lamar, K., *How much a dollar cost?* Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-how-much-a-dollar-cost-lyrics>

⁷⁸ XXXTENTACION, *Everybody Dies in Their Nightmares*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-everybody-dies-in-their-nightmares-lyrics>

⁷⁹ XXXTENTACION, *One minute*. Available at: www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/xxxtentacion/oneminute.html

⁸⁰ XXXTENTACION, *Hate Will Never Win*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-hate-will-never-win-lyrics>

Ludic stylistics of the “Trickster-Jester” role relies on explicit and implicit antithesis (“*Who knew evil girls have the prettiest face?*”),⁸¹ oxymoron (“*Going hard, hit them where it hurts, kill them softly*”),⁸² and other devices, which combine opposite, logically incompatible and mutually exclusive words or concepts. From a pragmatic viewpoint, such devices correlate with the violation of Grice’s maxim of manner (aimed at avoiding obscurity, ambiguities, or illogicalities), which triggers the discursive implicature – the inference of the meanings to restore semantic cohesion.

For example, antithesis in “*If I’m not the hottest, then Hell must’ve froze over*”⁸³, based on the diametrically opposed concepts of “Hell” and “frozen state”, flouts the maxim of manner / transparency of information. The triggered implicature refers to the “axiomaticity” of the rapper’s popularity, comparing the presupposition of hell as a place of eternal flame with the meaning of the usual metaphor “*hot is topline*” (not being in topline is as incredible for Asap Rocky as freezing for hell).

The Trickster-Shadow archetypical image is based on the role of “moral destroyer” with the strategies of:

(a) extreme self-expression (“*Schizo, maniac I’m fiendin’ to go klepto*”;⁸⁴ “*Only thing bigger than my ego is my mirror*”;⁸⁵ “*Now it’s time to show you what lunatics do*”);⁸⁶

(b) provocation expressed by obscene vocabulary and de-euphemization of themes (“*Bitches was harmed and they couldn’t reach the alarm I’m ripping sockets out like I had fucking problems with arms*”;⁸⁷ “*Like that lipstick position when she kissed me So I bit ‘em off, they was too soft, I’m a Wolf*”;⁸⁸ “*Sharp teeth in the chest (...) Of the beaten and bruised*”;⁸⁹

⁸¹ Juice WRLD, *Lucid Dreams*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-lucid-dreams-lyrics>

⁸² Asap Rocky, A\$AP Ferg & Nicki Minaj. *Runnin*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Mike-will-made-it-a-ap-rocky-a-ap-ferg-and-nicki-minaj-runnin-lyrics>

⁸³ Asap Rocky, *1Train*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-1train-lyrics>

⁸⁴ Asap Rocky, A\$AP Ferg & Nicki Minaj. *Runnin*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Mike-will-made-it-a-ap-rocky-a-ap-ferg-and-nicki-minaj-runnin-lyrics>

⁸⁵ Asap Rocky, *Wassup*. Available at <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-wassup-lyrics>

⁸⁶ Juice WRLD, *Make Believe*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-make-believe-lyrics>

⁸⁷ Tyler, the Creator. *Garbage*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-garbage-lyrics>

⁸⁸ Ibidem.

⁸⁹ XXXTENTACION, *Guardian Angel*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-guardian-angel-lyrics>

(c) embedding the elements related to the humiliation of an imaginary antagonist: “Look at all these clowns, how they studying my lingo Peeking out the window, but they’ll never win though”;⁹⁰ “out your mouth ain’t even worth sayin’”;⁹¹ “You hate, you’re lame, your loss”.⁹²

Each rap text represents a complex interweaving of roles that reveal different archetypes. In addition, there may be inter-archetypal role devices. Without delving into the analysis of other archetypal roles, it should nevertheless be noted that the ludic manifestations of the Trickster-Jester, resulted in narrative and stylistic experiments, correlate with the roles of the Explorer, while Shadow role manifestations overlap with the Rebel roles. The problem of the correlation of archetypal roles in the system of relationships – both syntagmatic (interconnected role sequence in providing meaningful cohesiveness of rap discourse) and paradigmatic (a set of roles suggesting one archetype, and, vice versa, a particular role associated with several archetypes) seems promising for subsequent studies of the rappers’ role identity.

Conclusions

Archetypal roles as variations of the archetypal images of the Sage, Magician or Trickster are indexed at all levels of stratification of rap discourse. The lexical-semantic means encode concepts associated with basic archetypal motifs: to change the world by acting on it through supernatural powers and tools as the Magician does; replace life with a game in Trickster-Jester roles, and sometimes, playfully, turn everything into chaos and destruction in Trickster-Shadow roles; find answers to philosophical questions in the Sage-Philosopher role, however, sometimes carried away by the design of meanings more than their essence thus performing the role of the Sage-Wise.

At the level of semantic cohesion, the roles of Sage-Philosopher and Trickster-Jester imply ambiguity and intentional incongruence of meanings, based on antithesis, oxymorons, metaphors, non sequitur, juxtaposition of disparate ideas, concepts and actions, accentuated by syntactical devices such as line break, ellipsis, parataxis, asyndeton, etc.

However, in regards of the Philosopher roles, the emphasized incongruence aims at the sacralization and symbolization of the ordinary

⁹⁰ Asap Rocky, A\$AP Ferg & Nicki Minaj. *Runnin*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Mike-will-made-it-a-ap-rocky-a-ap-ferg-and-nicki-minaj-runnin-lyrics>

⁹¹ Asap Rocky, *Distorted Records*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-distorted-records-lyrics>

⁹² Asap Rocky, *Praise the Lord*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-praise-the-lord-da-shine-lyrics>

situations, objects and characters while for Trickster, it's for the sake of experimentation and playing with forms and meanings.

At a pragmatic level, incongruence and ambiguity correspond to a violation of the cooperative maxims of relevance, manner and quantity of information, resulted in the discursive implicature.

The demonic characteristics of the Trickster-Shadow can associate with the roles of the Magician, with the difference that the former, in their semantic and syntactic parameters, reflect the dark sides, suppressed fears and feelings of the author-performer, while the latter translate these fears into magical images, with the help of which the Magician structures his own world.

References

Alim, H.S., Awad, I., Pennycook, A., (2005), *Global linguistic flows: Hip hop cultures, youth identities, and the politics of language*. New York, NY, Routledge, 264 p.

Asap Rocky, *Distorted Records*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-distorted-records-lyrics>

Asap Rocky, *Pain*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-pain-lyrics>

Asap Rocky, *Palace*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-palace-lyrics>

Asap Rocky, *Praise the Lord*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-praise-the-lord-da-shine-lyrics>

Asap Rocky, A\$AP Ferg & Nicki Minaj. *Runnin*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Mike-will-made-it-a-ap-rocky-a-ap-ferg-and-nicki-minaj-runnin-lyrics>

Asap Rocky, *iTrain*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-itrain-lyrics>

Asap Rocky, *Wassup*. Available at: <https://genius.com/A-ap-rocky-wassup-lyrics>

Benwell, B., Stokoe, E., (2006), *Discourse and identity*. Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press, 314 p.

Brockmeier, J., Carbaugh, D.A. (eds.), / (2001), *Narrative and identity: Studies in autobiography, self, and culture*. Amsterdam, John Benjamins Publishing Company. Available at: <https://doi.org/10.1075/sin.1>

Davies, B., Harré, R., (1990), Positioning: The discursive production of selves. *Journal for the theory of social behavior*, 20 (1), pp. 43-63.

Faber, M.A., Mayer, J.D., (2009), Resonance to archetypes in media: There's some accounting for taste. *Journal of Research in Personality*, 43, pp. 307-322.

Goldman, A., Ford, V., Harris, A., Howard, R., (eds.) / (2014), *Black Women and Popular Culture: The Conversation Continues*. Lanham, Lexington Books, 326 pp.

Grube, J.A., Piliavin, J.A., (2000), *Role Identity, Organizational Experiences, and Volunteer Performance*. *Personality and Social Psychology Bulletin*. 26(9), pp. 1108-1119.

Haaken, J., Wallin-Rushman, J., Patange, S., (2012), Global hip-hop identities: Black youth, psychoanalytic action research, and the moving to the beat project. *Journal of Community & Applied Social Psychology*, 22, pp. 63-74.

Harrison, A.K., (2015), Hip Hop and Race. *The Routledge Reader on The Sociology of Music* / J. Sheperd & K. Devine (eds.), pp. 191-199.

Hodge, D.W., (2018), *Homeland Insecurity: A Hip Hop Missiology for the Post-Civil Rights Context*. Downers Grove, IVP Academic, 304 p.

Howard, W.L., (2010), Archetype. *Encyclopedia of Identity* / R. L. Jackson II, M.A. Hogg (eds.). Vol. 1, pp. 29-32.

Juice WRLD, *All Girls Are the Same*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-all-girls-are-the-same-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Black & White*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-black-and-white-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Empty*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-empty-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Hear Me Calling*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-hear-me-calling-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Hide*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-hide-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Lucid Dreams*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-lucid-dreams-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Make Believe*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-make-believe-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Run*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-run-lyrics>

Juice WRLD, *Wasted*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Juice-wrld-wasted-lyrics>

Jung, C.G., (1969), Archetypes and the Collective Unconscious [sic]. *Collected Works of C.G. Jung*, Volume 9 (Part 1), Princeton, N.J., Princeton University Press, 470 p.

Jung, C.G., (1976), Psychological types. *Collected works*. London, Routledge & Kegan Paul, V.6, 608 p.

Kravchenko, N.K., (2019), Biblical intertextuality devices in African-American rap texts (based on the Kendrick Lamar's album "Damn"). *International journal of philology*. Vol. 10 (2,) pp. 12-17.

Kravchenko, N., Snitsar, V., (2019), Cultural archetypes in the construction of "possible worlds" of modern African-American rap (based on Kendrick Lamar's texts). *Euromentor Journal*. V. X (4), pp.80-92.

Kravchenko, N., Pasternak, T., (2018), Claim for identity or personality face: The Oscar winners' dilemma. *Lege artis. Language yesterday, today, tomorrow. The journal of University of SS Cyril and Methodius in Trnava*. Warsaw, De Gruyter Open, III (1), pp. 142-178.

Lamar, K., *Duckworth*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-duckworth-lyrics>

Lamar, K., *Element*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-element-lyrics>

Lamar, K., *Fear*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-fear-lyrics>

Lamar, K., *How much a dollar cost?* Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-how-much-a-dollar-cost-lyrics>

Lamar, K., *m.A.A.d city*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-maad-city-lyrics>

Lamar K., *Mortal Man*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Kendrick-lamar-mortal-man-lyrics>

Lindenfeld, D., (2009), Jungian archetypes and the discourse of history. *Rethinking History*, 13(2), pp. 217-234.

Merchant, J., (2009), A reappraisal of classical archetype theory and its implications for theory and practice. *Journal of Analytical Psychology*, 54(3), pp. 339-358. Available at: <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1468-5922.2009.01784.x>

Muggs, J., (2016), Odd futures: how hip-hop shook off its macho image and got weird. *The Guardian*. Available at:

<https://www.theguardian.com/music/2016/apr/06/hip-hop-weird-image-nicki-minaj-kendrick-lamar-kanye-west>

Pearson, J. L., Dollinger, S. J., (2004), Music preference correlates of Jungian types. *Personality and Individual Differences*, 36, pp. 1005-1008.

Pietikainen, P. (1998). Archetypes as symbolic forms. *Journal of Analytical Psychology*, 43, pp. 325-343.

Shadraonis, S., (2013), "Leaders and Heroes: Modern Day Archetypes," *LUX: A Journal of Transdisciplinary Writing and Research from Claremont Graduate University*, Vol. 3: Iss. 1, Article 15. Available at: <http://scholarship.claremont.edu/lux/vol3/iss1/15>

Spencer-Oatey, H., (2007), Theories of identity and the analysis of face. *Journal of pragmatics*, 39, pp. 639-656.

Stebbins, R.A., (2013), Role-distance, activity distance, and the dramaturgical metaphor. *The Drama of Social Life: A Dramaturgical Handbook* / Edgley, C. (ed.), Ashgate, Surrey, UK, pp. 123–136.

Stets, J.E., Burke, P.J., (2000), Identity theory and social identity theory. *Social Psychology Quarterly*, 63, pp. 224–237.

Tyler, the Creator. *Bastard*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/albums/Tyler-the-creator/Bastard>

Tyler, the Creator. *Forever*. Available at: <https://lyrics.lol/artist/685-tyler-the-creator/lyrics/65437-forever>

Tyler, the Creator, 48. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-48-lyrics>

Tyler, the Creator, *Foreword*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-foreword-lyrics>

<https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-foreword-lyrics>

Tyler, the Creator. *Garbage*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-garbage-lyrics>

Tyler, the Creator, *New Magic Wand*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-new-magic-wand-lyrics>

Tyler, the Creator, *Yonkers*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Tyler-the-creator-yonkers-lyrics>

Van den Akker, R., Gibbons, A., Vermeulen, T., (2017), *Metamodernism: Historicity, Affect, and Depth after Postmodernism (Radical Cultural Studies)*. London; New York, Rowman & Littlefield International, 260 p.

XXXTENTACION, *Alone, Part 3*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-alone-part-3-lyrics>

XXXTENTACION, *Everybody Dies in Their Nightmares*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-everybody-dies-in-their-nightmares-lyrics>

XXXTENTACION, *Guardian Angel*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-guardian-angel-lyrics>

XXXTENTACION, *Hate Will Never Win*. Available at: <https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-hate-will-never-win-lyrics>

XXXTENTACION, *Infinity (888)*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-infinity-888-lyrics>

XXXTENTACION, *One minute*. Available at:

<https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/xxxtentacion/oneminute.html>

XXXTENTACION, *Revenge*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-revenge-lyrics>

XXXTENTACION, *Royalty*. Available at:

<https://genius.com/Xxxtentacion-royalty-lyrics>